

*Lawrence*  
*De Statu Mortuorum & Resurgentium* 11.9.1  
*Tractatus.*

OF THE  
STATE  
OF THE  
DEAD,  
AND OF  
THOSE that are to RISE.

*Translated from the LATIN Original of Dr. BURNET,*  
*Master of the Charter-House. With an Answer to*  
*all the HERESIES therein.* *R*

By MATTHIAS EARBERRY,  
Presbyter of the Church of ENGLAND.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

*The Souls of the Righteous are in the Hand of GOD, and there  
shall no Torment touch them.*

*In the Sight of the Unwise, they seemed to Die, and their Departure  
is taken for Misery.*

*And their going from us, to be utter Destruction, but they are in  
Peace, Wisd. iii. 1, 2, 3.*

THE SECOND EDITION.

LONDON:

Printed for E. CURLE in the Strand. 1728.

Price 10s. 6d.

*97*



10





T O  
The Right Honourable  
THE  
Earl of OXFORD.

My LORD,



I Have often reflected upon the Curiosity of our *English* Nation, at this present Time, in searching Records and Antiquity to find their Ancestors; and how fond they are of accumulated Honours in their Families.

AT the same Time, likewise, we might expect some Share of Curiosity, in searching the State their Ancestors are in, as to Peace and Happiness, Torment and Misery; how they spend Myriads of Ages betwixt Death and the Resurrection; and whether if their Sons



## DEDICATION.

come to Honour or Dishonour, they know or care.

THESE are curious Speculations into a State more dark than the most remote Antiquity, where few Monuments, or Lights, are set up, and fewer People will go to bring back an exact Plan of that Place.

AS YOUR LORDSHIP is an universal Patron of the Learned, I present that polite Man, Dr. Burnet, to Your Protection, corrected as to several Errors : And, with him, I presume to introduce what Discoveries I have been able to make of that State, as far as can be judged by the Operations of our Souls ; and if any Thing I have said can be acceptable to Your LORDSHIP, it will be the highest Honour and Satisfaction to Your LORDSHIP'S

*Most Obedient Humble Servant,*

MATTHIAS EARBERRY.





## P R E F A C E.

**A**S the *Soul of Man* is naturally formed to enlarge its Knowledge, and take in almost an infinite Compass thereof; I do not wonder, it frets at the Checks, and Impediments on its Way; stopped in its Career even in the Pursuit of its own Operations: Much less do I wonder, that it cannot bear the Restraint, from prying into the Secrets of the Grave, a State of so much Consequence to know; for when our Thoughts, Affections, and Passions are so taken up, with *This World*, there must be some Concern for *That*, in which, for aught we know, we have Myriads of Ages to consume, and waste, before we come to the Summit of our Happiness, our lasting Fruition in **Heaven.**



## P R E F A C E.

IN all our Speculations upon that Head, we grope in the Dark, and grasp at Shadows. Therefore when any Book comes out, with a pompous Title, *Of the State of the Dead*, it is bought up eagerly, and the World expects as plain and ample Discoveries, as of the Isle of *Lilliput*, and the Transactions of *Lemuel Gulliver*.

I can promise no such Thing here, neither can I pretend to write Annals of the Transactions of that Place; my Author, indeed, dips too freely into the *Millenarian Scheme*, and there I shall take care to bring him back, when he strays beyond the Marks and Limits set up by Reason, and makes his Excursion into the Land of Fairies.

I cannot sufficiently commend the Pains he has taken, to explode that too commonly received Doctrine, of our going Post from the Grave to Heaven, because it is contrary to the Notion of a Resurrection, and to the concurrent Opinion of all the *Fathers*, who must be supposed to understand something Traditionally, from the Conversation of our Blessed Saviour with his *Disciples*.

BUT I have before (in my Letter to Dr. Brett) proved, that nothing so dark, can have



## P R E F A C E.

have the Evidence of a Law; and therefore, *Prayers* for the *Dead* are presumptuous Practices, rather than of Divine Institution; and this I think fit, to premise, to stop the Mouths of my old Friends, who perhaps would take Advantage from these Concessions, to make me speak more than I ever thought, and to board me with an *essential*, a sort of *Privateering* lately brought in upon our *Seas of Controversy*.

I leave the Reader to a Candid Interpretation of my Labours, and bid him heartily Farewell.

LONDON, *July*

14. 1727.

M. EARBERRY.





P R E F A C E

The following Admonition was  
prefixed to the *Quarto Edition*  
of the *Latin Original*.

**T**HE celebrated Author, caused  
only two or three Copies of  
this Book to be printed off, with this  
Intention, that they might pass the  
Judgement of his Friends; and his  
Thoughts, by succeeding Revivals, be  
amended, and by repeated Tryals come  
forth improved, and kept to himself, as  
he was advised by several grave Divines.

After his Death, a Copy being found  
in his Study, with Alterations, some  
were printed, for the Use of a very  
few Persons, as it was thought by learn-  
ed Men a great Pity, to suffer a Work,  
elaborated by so great a Man, to be in-  
tirely lost: The greatest Care was ta-  
ken to stop their Circulation in the  
World, and whoever had the Liberty  
of having the Book put into his Hands,  
was obliged upon Honour, not to have  
it transcribed, or delivered to the Press.





The Whole

# CONTENTS

O F

Dr. BURNET'S TREATISE,

*De Statu Mortuorum & Resurgentium.*

VOL. I. in Two Parts.

THE Introduction, Argument, and Method  
of treating the Subject pag. 1

## CHAP. I.

That Human Happiness has not only a Dependance on  
this Life; but on Another p. 3

CHAP. II. That the Human Soul is an Immortal  
Substance, distinct from the Body and from Mat-  
ter p. 14

CHAP. III. What is the future State of the Soul after  
the Corporeal Dissolution, or concerning the Middle  
State of Souls betwixt Death and the Resurrection,  
as to the Degrees of Happiness and Misery p. 47

Appendix thereto p. 91

CHAP. IV. The Natural State of Souls during the In-  
terval of Death and the Resurrection. Whether they  
are naked and separated from all Manner of Cor-  
poreal Substance, or are united to an Aerial One,  
or to some other. p. 111

CHAP.



## CONTENTS.

- CHAP. V. *A Transition to the other Parts of this Treatise; and first, concerning the Coming of Christ, and the Conflagration of the World* p. 127
- CHAP. VI. *Concerning the Supreme Judgement, its Apparatus, Manner, End, and Effect* p. 145
- CHAP. VII. *Concerning the Resurrection of the Dead; the State of the Raised, and of their Bodies* p. 179
- CHAP. VIII. *What Bodies we are to have at the Resurrection; whether the same with our present, or different ones therefrom* p. 223
- 

## VOL. II.

### *The State of Those that are to Rise, viz.*

- CHAP. IX. *Concerning the First and Last Resurrection; the New Heavens and the New Earth; and the Restoration of Nature; the Millenary Reign of Christ; and the Consummation of all Things* p. 1
- A DIGRESSION concerning the State of the Jews in the Millennium, and the future Reign of the Messiah* p. 55
- CHAP. X. *Concerning Heaven and Hell; what is the Heaven of the Christians, and how far Local; what is Hell, and whether there is a subterraneous one or not; or any other local, corporeal and external one before the Day of Judgement and the Conflagration of the World; of the Pains of Hell; whether they are infinite, or finite, or no.* p. 63
- The Conclusion, or Summary of the Work, by the Author* p. 98
- The Translator's Conclusion* p. 118



27

its

45

ad

79

Re-

or

23

1

—

79

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1

1





10112

971211

536

2755

10

10

1997

10

—

11

1998

—

—

2

15

Of

On

100

—

100

The

**The**

20

10



are o

## Body

entire

Vc

10

10

10

10

10

10

10





OF THE  
STATE  
OF THE  
DEAD,  
AND  
Of THOSE that are to Rise.

---

*The Introduction, Argument, and Method of  
Treating the Subject.*



HE slight, uncertain, and miserable  
State of human Affairs in this present  
Life, naturally forms this Question,  
*Whether upon That alone, all Tempo-  
ral Happiness depends?* And, as we  
are composed and made up of two distinct Parts,  
Body and Soul, and the Body has its Period and  
entire Extinction within the narrow Bounds of an

VOL I.

B

Age;



## 2 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Age; it remains still a Question, Whether the latter survives, or undergoes the same common Fate of Extinction with the first? If this be granted, there is an End of us. We go off the Stage of Existence together, and end all Disputes of Things that have ceased to Be.

But, on the other Side, If the Soul does survive this corporeal Dissolution; and, free from Confinement, flourishes in a separate State, many Questions arise concerning this separate Existence of the Soul. What Sort of Life it enjoys, and how long the Duration thereof will be, after this Change of Condition. We may enquire what Sort of Body it assumes, the different Portions of the Wicked and the Just; their Punishments and Rewards. From whence we proceed to trace out, and pursue the Fate of that immortal Being, from its first Emancipation to the final Consummation of the whole.

This is our View in this present Work, to separate the Clear from the Obscure; and the Things in Secret from those in Publick; that they may have their proper Situations in Shade and Light. In the mean time, may GOD, the Father of Light, scatter the dark and doubtful Images of Things away, and place clear and amiable Truth before our Eyes.

### R E M A R K S.

Our Author, in his Introduction to this Work, acts as *Savoyards* do with their Raree-Shows, he just gives us a Peep into the Machinery, and then draws the Curtain over again, till he makes his Bargain with his Readers. He engages them with as full Promises of something fine to come, and it would indeed be a great Performance, and very useful to this present Age, to make such ample Discoveries of that World beyond the Grave; a World the Sun of human Knowledge never yet shined upon; and Revelation has afforded very few Torches  
for

for  
from  
believ  
Advan  
World  
Spirits  
lieve  
View  
Blood  
only  
strong  
and S  
has hi  
Impul  
It  
Design  
can di  
Obscu  
histin  
of the  
Perfor  
that al  
mour  
and so

That  
pe

T  
derat  
the u  
Found  
temp  
upon



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 3

for a Light to our Feet. He proposes to separate the Clear from the Obscure, and the Things in secret from those in publick. I believe Secrets of this Nature would more directly tend to the Advancement of publick Morality, than all the Sermons in the World, deduced from Reason and Scripture. As the Talk of Spirits will sometimes make the Blood chill of those who believe nothing of the Matter; so to give a wicked Man a little View of that World he must enter into, divested of Flesh and Blood, may make him drop some of his Arguments, supported only by the Sanguineness of his Constitution. But this is too strong an Operation to go through with, to answer the Design and Scope of Rewards and Punishments, and therefore GOD has hid much of those Things from so strong and sensible an Impulse upon the Mind.

It may be expected next for me to let the Reader into my Design. I shall promise less, and be glad to perform more. If I can dispel some Darkness from our Author, and chase away Obscurity, and make Room to build something upon, sure and lasting, to confute Atheists, and convince Deists of the Folly of their strait-laced Hypothesis, I shall gain my Point in this Performance. And so I pray to the great GOD of Heaven, that all my Steps may be rather directed to his Glory and Honour, than the Advancement of my own Pride and Ambition, and so leave the Reader to expect the Rest.

---

### CHAP. I.

*That Human Happiness has not only a Dependence upon this Life, but on Another.*

THAT GOD is the Great, the Good, the Righteous, Just, and Equal Father, and Moderator of all Things, is proclaimed by Nature and the universal Consent of Mankind: And upon this Foundation the human Understanding, from a Contemplation upon its present State, is led to reflect upon a future one. For when it considers, that in



#### 4 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

the present Administration of human Affairs, the Laws of Justice in Rewards and Punishments are slighted; it consequently follows, all the Parts of the *Drama* are not yet performed, and that a Scene remains behind, to be filled up answerable to our Expectations of another Life. The Goods of Fortune and outward Happiness are not attached to Virtue and Wisdom here; they being common to the worst of Men: If therefore human Happiness had its Bounds and Limits below, the Great and just Judge, and Governour of all Things, could not permit this inverted Order to remain in this Manner. That the Good are to be rewarded, and the bad punished, is the universal Determination of GOD and Man: But we may call the Heaven and Earth, and conscious Stars to witness, that no such Administration in this Life, with us miserable Mortals, is to be seen: And as we lay it infallibly down, that GOD is Just and Good; Rewards and Punishments must, as infallibly belong to another Life, independently of Happiness and Misery in this.

Neither are we to complain of the Misfortunes of more modern Ages; but in all Times, if we consult either *Greek* or *Roman* Monuments of Antiquity, we shall find the *Socrateses* and *Catoes* of all Ages, and the best and greatest of Men, oppressed and broken by ill Fortune, pointed out for popular Hatred and envious Reproaches, and all their liberal Virtues become the Objects of tyrannical and potent Spleen.

Moreover, as this promiscuous Distribution to the Good and Bad, is not equal to the Divine Rectitude and Justice, to last for ever; so neither is our present Condition, if that was all, correspondent to the Dignity of GOD, or of human Nature. Indeed the Supposition of innumerable Worlds, makes the

the L  
sent  
in Va  
habit  
beyon  
even  
to M  
of ou  
how t  
seem  
an im  
ons o  
ties o  
Varia  
appea  
and su  
Pover  
So th  
the C  
specto  
of a f  
But  
Life,  
are no  
even t  
in thi  
whene  
at ou  
but in  
Why  
of a  
for, a  
taind  
neithe  
of m  
What



## *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

5

the Difficulty less; But those who suppose this present Earth, a pitiful Atom as to Bigness, and sordid in Value, [See, *Theory of the Earth. B. i. C. x.*] to be habitable alone, and that nothing is to be expected beyond this Life, degrade the Divine Majesty below even human Nature, and make GOD inferiour to Man. But if we pass over the Inconsiderableness of our Earth, and observe only our Affairs below, how trifling, minute, and confused they are; they seem to proceed from an Evil, or to be supported by an impotent Being. View the Wars and Contentions of Princes, and the little Quarrels and Enmities of private Men, and how much they are at Variance for Nothing: More Folly than Wisdom appears in Sight, attended with short-lived Pleasures, and succeeded by Labour and Grief, from Diseases, Poverty, Enmities, and innumerable Evils more. So that this Story of human Life, answers neither the Character of GOD as the Father, or the Inspector of the World, if we take the Consideration of a future State away.

But moreover, the Impertinencies of this present Life, without the Hope and Prospect of Futurity, are not only below the Notion of a GOD, but of even the Nature of the human Soul itself. We seem in this mortal State sunk beneath our selves; from whence rises the Shame and Confusion we confess at our natural Affections, not only when we sin, but in submitting to the Necessities of our Nature? Why does this happen, except from a Consciousness of a Defect of some Capacities we surely are born for, and expect some Time to have? We are detained in this Life with trifling Amusements, that neither become nor satisfy a rational Soul, capable of much more great, and noble Acquirements. Whatever is truly divine in us, is oppressed with the



## 6 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Weight and Burden of Corporal Wants, Raiment, Food, and Health; Demands from whence the Soul derives no solid Benefit, and that sink it into lasting Slavery and Servitude\*; under which it groans and wears away in vile and low Occupations. To what Purpose is that Understanding given us, which pierces through the Secrets of Heaven and Earth; and that commendable Ambition of searching deeper still? Why is that unquenchable Thirst after immortal Things, and that heroick Virtue in some Men superiour to all private Considerations of Interest, and guided only into the Sense of Honour and the publick Good? I can never believe GOD bestowed these noble and glorious Instincts in vain; but that, on the contrary, we shall be freed from our dull Imprisonment here, and launch into new Light and Happiness eternal.

You may perceive human Understanding and the Operations thereof, in a Manner restrained and extinguished by the Body; and the more sublime they are, the restraint is more perceptible and uneasy. To what Purpose then is this Force and Vigour of the Mind endeavouring to break through the Bounds and Limits of Life, if there is nothing to come at beyond? In Vain has GOD and Nature given us Wings, to creep upon all-Four and sweep the Ground, and not to mount on high. Nay, they are an Hindrance to us; for the more elevated and

\* Can any one imagine, that Man is born only to eat and drink, and satiate all the Appetites of his brutal Body; to swallow Wind, and feed upon fallacious Hopes his whole Life: And after this short Scene of Madness is over, to sink into the Dust of Death, and be absorbed in the Bowels of the Earth? Is this the End of Man and of human Affairs? We were not born rashly and by Chance, but some Power brooded over Mankind, not to support it through all Misfortunes, only for everlasting Death, Cic. Tus. Quæst. in the Close.

abstracted

abstracted  
Thing  
Life;  
the So  
in its  
Terre  
This i  
Means  
bear S  
Were  
my fu  
would  
Day v  
Th  
Proofs  
Huma  
State.  
Natur  
GOD  
immu  
Good  
future  
if we  
appea  
By  
and i  
and p  
they a  
ted to  
Laws  
man I  
Perfec  
As  
Canon  
ties o  
Vices



*Of the STATE of the DEAD.* 7

abstracted the Mind is, the more unfit for earthly Things, and to look after the common Calls of Life; for which only if we are made and formed, the Soul lies down in its own Virtue, and perishes in its own Wisdom, and all is lost, except that Terrene Part, which is more justly stiled Folly. This is a Reproach to GOD and Man, and by no Means tolerable to a great and ingenious Mind, to bear Servitude of this Kind over human Nature. Were these the Conditions thereof, offered to me in my full Senses, before the Day of my Birth, I would scorn and reject them, and the Life that Day was to bring with it.

Thus far we have brought our Arguments and Proofs from both the Considerations of Divine and Human Nature, to prove the Certainty of a future State. We have another Method of arguing, from the Nature of Things, conjunctly with the Nature of GOD. If there is a GOD, there are eternal and immutable Laws of Good and Evil, to separate Good from Bad, Just from Unjust; with these a future State has a mutual and indissoluble Connection, if we will take a nearer View thereof, as I will make appear.

By the Word GOD we understand the highest and infinitely perfect DEITY, wise, good, just, and pure; which as they are Perfections, in GOD, they are more faintly, yet proportionably distributed to all inferiour and intellectual Beings: These Laws therefore are Eternal; they flow not from human Powers, but from the immutable Nature and Perfection of GOD.

As GOD therefore is this chief Perfection, the Canon and Rule of Right and Wrong; the Qualities opposed to that Rule are, from Eternity, Stains, Vices, and Errours, flowing from their Oppolition to



## 8 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

that eternal Law. This is the *First* Part of our Argument. We must *2dly* consider, That Things are not only thus distinguished, but Men are divided into two Orders, good and bad, just and unjust, honest and vile; and GOD equally loves one, as he hates the other: For GOD cannot but love his own Image and his own Perfections, and acknowledge, cherish, and sustain them, wherever they are to be found; and likewise hate, reject, and abhor what is contrary to the Perfection of his Nature. As therefore GOD is most absolutely the Lover of Right, he cannot be an idle Spectator; he must act as a Judge, and not bestow Felicity on Friends and Enemies, Good and Bad alike; but give the latter likewise their Share. And as any one arrives nearer to the Perfection of Virtue, Piety, and true Wisdom, the nearer he is elevated and blessed in that Proximity to the Nature of his GOD. But as we see nothing of these Things in our present State, it is as certain as the Being of a GOD himself, and equally immoveable and firm, that they are to be expected in a future one.

Let us moreover add, as the last and crowning Argument of all, the universal Assent of Nations to a future State: Nor unworthily; for the Voice of Nature is the Index and Test of Truth. The Force of this Argument is endeavoured to be undermined two Ways, *First*, The Universality of this Opinion is contradicted by, at least, the *Barbarians* and illiterate People: *2dly*, Amongst even the Philosophers themselves it was opposed, if not totally taken away.

As to the *First*, Whosoever amongst those Nations worshipped any God at all, or advanced any religious Rites and Ceremonies, in those very Acts testified a Hope and Fear of Futurity as to Rewards and Punishments, as they pleased or displeased their Gods.



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 2

Gods. As to the Rest, who had no Notion of any Thing Divine, or even Human, and lived upon a Level only equal with Brutes; they are not a Rule or Measure for Humanity, who are the very Dregs of *Barbarism* itself. We must not judge of the Virtue of Herbs from those degenerated, and springing from an improper Soil; but we must look for those in their native Glebe, blessed with the Dew of Heaven, and invigorated by the Warmth of the Sun; there, the only proper Species of the Plant, and the natural Virtues thereof are to be found. Nor can you see the Brightness and Splendour of a Jewel in its natural and unpolished State: But when the fordid Faeces are taken away, and the Surface smoothed, the Light and Virtue it reflects back, are all its own, and stamp a Value upon the same.

As to the *Second*, if any learned Men or Philosophers ever denied a future State, they were either absolute Materialists, or at least they denied the natural Distinction of the Laws of Good and Evil. The second Chapter is allotted for the Confutation of the Materialists. And as to the latter, if we have proved the Distinction of Good and Evil, from the Nature of GOD, their Error at once falls to the Ground; and we have from the same Argument connected a future State with the Nature of GOD and of Things. Upon the Whole, If there is a GOD, there is a future State; and they who acknowledge him can never eradicate the Belief thereof from the Mind of Man. Thus far we have proceeded in the Path illuminated only by Nature: but from the sacred Oracles we exhaust more copious Fountains of Light, that clearly shine upon, and illustrate a future State. I cannot deny the dark and doubtful Light upon that future State, in the *Jewish* OEconomy; but Christianity has made the same



10 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

same as bright as the Day; nor did the Sun ever cast a more undoubted Splendour upon our Earth at Noon, than these sacred Writings have upon Immortality. I shall say nothing here concerning that supreme Judicature at the Resurrection; but it is certain CHRIST and his Apostles have made our whole Religion turn upon the Distinction of a present and future State. *For what shall it profit a Man, if he shall gain the whole World, and lose his own Soul?* Mark viii. 36. The Soul, to whose Wishes every Thing succeeds in this World, cannot be destroyed and reduced to Misery, except in another. Again, CHRIST says, *Make to your selves Friends of the Mammon of Unrighteousness; that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting Habitations.* Luk. xvi. 9. Again, *And fear not them which kill the Body, but are not able to kill the Soul: But rather fear him which is able to destroy both Soul and Body in Hell.* Matth. x. 28. Likewise, *But he that denieth me before Men, shall be denied before the Angels of GOD.* Luke xii. 9. *And every one that hath forsaken, &c. for my Name sake, shall receive an Hundred-fold, and shall inherit everlasting Life.* Matth. xix. 29. In these and in many other Places, both the present and future States are pointed out distinctly by CHRIST, not only in the plain Way of speaking, but in Parables, as in those of *Lazarus and Dives, The Jewel of inestimable Price, The Wheat and the Tares*; and in his Sermon upon the Mount, in his daily Conversation at all Times, and in all Places, he speaks meanly of the Goods and Evils of this Life, in Comparison with the Kingdom of Heaven and eternal Happiness, or everlasting Misery. Lastly, At his Resurrection from the dead, and visible Ascent into Heaven, he expressly taught and demonstrated the same before their Eyes. In the same

same  
tread  
St. P  
Men  
we kn  
were  
not m  
we th  
ed: n  
on, t  
2 Cor  
he in  
pires  
presen  
which  
do I  
this e  
CHR  
to L  
and  
in his  
taugh

He  
ing,  
or th  
with  
or tw  
Th  
tainly  
TH  
Etern  
Etern  
Exist  
1.  
is an



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. II

same Steps of asserting a double State, the Apostles tread in several Places. *If in this Life only* (says St. Paul) *we have Hope in CHRIST, we are of all Men most miserable.* 1 Cor. xv. 19. And again, *For we know, that if our earthly House of this Tabernacle were dissolved, we have a Building of GOD; an House not made with Hands, eternal in the Heavens. For we that are in this Tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that Mortality might be swallowed up of Life.* 2 Cor. v. 1, 4. Likewise in his Epistle to the Romans, he insinuates, that all Nature groans for, and aspires after Immortality. *And that the Sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to be compared with the Glory which shall be revealed in us.* Rom. viii. 18. But why do I insist farther, when every Page sounds forth this eternal Life, as the Reward of our Faith? And CHRIST is said to have brought Life and Immortality to Light through the Gospel. This is more clearly and efficaciously explained by him, than by Moses in his Law, or the Philosophers in their Schools ever taught.

## REMARKS.

He begins with a very handsome Portico to his new Building, all neat Moral Work, without any Excursions into Fancy, or the Land of Fairies; so that I have no Scope to differ with him yet, but only to illustrate a very good Argument or two he dwells upon.

The Eternity of some Laws, and what these Laws are, certainly open a Way into this Question of a future State.

That there are positive and Eternal Truths, is as certain as Eternity it self: For as Duration is the Measure of Time, so Eternity is the Measure of Things, that have an independent Existence of positive Laws, and created Beings.

1. To illustrate this I shall lay it down as a Maxim, that there is an eternal and intelligent Being, we call GOD.

2. That



## 12 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

2. That he is infinitely powerful; or in other Words, he can do all Things that are the Objects of Power, by an independent Efficacy in his own Nature.

3. That he is immutable; because all Mutability proceeds from a Defect of Power, as crooked Lines are Deviations from right ones, for want of Force; consequently to be mutable, is to act in Contradiction to his own Attributes.

Therefore all that belong to GOD, as a moral and an intelligent Being, are these Truths, that Eternity is the Measure of, and is the first Branch of my Hypothesis, that there are positive and eternal Truths.

Therefore as we measure all moral Truths, by their Conformity to the Nature of GOD, immutable, omnipotent, and intelligent; whatever moral Properties there are in GOD, they are immutable, and consequently eternal.

Therefore, if we once fix our Idea's of moral Virtues, and find by rational Deduction, that those Virtues are in GOD, they are the eternal Truths we are seeking after.

If GOD is once just, he is always so, if he is once wise, he is always so, and if he were the contrary to these, he would be always so.

The next, and indeed the nicest Part of my Hypothesis, is to fix what these eternal Truths are; what I have before said being one Degree lower than Mathematical Demonstration, that is wanting only Matter to work upon, instead of Metaphysical Qualities, though the Proof may be as strong, the Demonstration is not so clear to human Perception.

To proceed, there are two eternal Truths particularly concerned in the Question of a future State, Wisdom and Justice.

Therefore, if GOD is just once, not accidentally, but from the Nature of Justice, that Justice is an eternal and an immutable Truth.

If GOD creates out of Love, and that is the Motive of the Creation, he always loves, and when we see any contrary Effects to love, viz. Punishments and Pain, we must conclude this proceeds from an eternal Truth, and not from the Mutability of his Nature, and that can be only from his Justice.

By Justice in GOD, I mean his Distribution of his own Actions to the Creation.

Therefore if Man is punished, it proceeds from an eternal Truth, that he ought not, and must not have the Benefit of GOD's Love; and from hence flows this Definition of moral Justice, *a Distribution of Right to every Man*, as in GOD it is indispensable, in Man it is so likewise.

I omit



## *Of the STATE of the DEAD.* 13

I omit here the Punishments of Love, for Correction, Amendment, and a Preparation for an eternal State of Glory; but I mean clear and distinct Punishments from all Attachments of succeeding Rewards and Amends.

From these Considerations, a future State infallibly follows; because this World, though beautifully made, has its dark Side and Misery enough, that cannot be accounted for, without a future State.

For every Man cannot taste the delicious Wines and Food, nor some even drink the cooling Streams of Water in the Vallies, nor get the Wooll of one Sheep amongst a Thousand upon the Hills, to clothe their own Backs, and many Blessings more we see in this Life unaccountably bestowed upon Fools and wicked Men.

In this World we see nothing except GOD's basilick Justice; which, though it proceeds from the same Principle that made the World, his Love for Mankind, the solid Effects of that Love are reserved for a State on the other Side the Grave.

From hence another Question arises concerning the Condignity of Punishments, and to reconcile Pardon with that Justice; and moreover the Condignity of Rewards comes under these Considerations,

I assert, it is not inconsistent with the Sovereign Power and Justice of GOD, to pardon Faults, provided it tends to the main End for which he made that Creature, his Love for him, to break, restore and bring him within the Sphere of Mercy and Salvation; and the wicked who proceed in a continued impenitent State, the Gross of their Crimes calls for that other Side of his Justice, his Punishments instead of his Rewards; and they must be as necessarily damned as the just Live.

In Rewards therefore GOD has Respect to the Frame and Condition of a Man, if he is fit, or not incapable of a State of Blessedness hereafter; in Punishments, if he finds the Person live in open and known Sins, being incapable of Happiness, Justice lays hold of him likewise for Misery.

The Infirmities of human Nature will not admit Congruity for either Rewards or Punishments for particular Facts; for then no Man could be saved, because one mortal Sin would cut off all the Rewards; therefore the whole System of Life is taken in and weighed in the Balance of Divine Justice.

I conclude the Certainty of a future State necessarily flows from this eternal Truth, the Justice of GOD.



## 14 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

As for the universal Assent of Mankind, in all Times and in all Places where eternal Truth can spring up, we have it certainly on our Side; for the strongest Arguments we can use in Writing, inforced with all the Powers of Reason, have some faint Appearance in the Minds of all, except the most depraved. The Sun, for ought I know, may in Time be so incrustated as to give no Light; and so is the Mind of Man, by a barbarous and wild Education, and some other such Incrustations, that we can hardly see a human Soul through them.

### CHAP. II.

*That the Human Soul is an Immortal Substance, distinct from the Body and from Matter.*

**H**AVING laid down a future State, the Immortality of the Soul necessarily follows. But this some will have to be adventitious, and an Effect of Divine Favour only. Others will have it to be ingenite, and that the Soul is in its own Nature Indissoluble. In either State the Immortality remains unshaken and uncontested; and as we have before observed, wherever the Scripture mentions eternal Life, the Resurrection of the Dead, Judgement, or future Rewards and Punishments; Heaven, Hell, and the rest; they always suppose after the Dissolution of the Body, the Soul to subsist, live, and think. Therefore I imagine it not improper to enquire, if over and above that Divine Grace, it has not from its own Principles an immortal and incorruptible Nature. We know nothing of the Soul except Thought, and the Powers thereof; nothing else can we find out and feel in our selves; the Soul has no Manner of Action either in it self or externally, by Tacture or Impulse, but what proceeds from the Force of Thinking; whether that



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 15

that Action is stiled Understanding, Will, Appetite, and the like, and the Passions thereof, whether in the Soul or from without, the same are only the Effects of the various Powers of Thought. Therefore if the whole Essence of the Soul consists in Thought, this is the Life of that Soul, continually active and conscious, and can be destroyed no otherwise than by Annihilation. For if you take away the Essence of the Soul, you annihilate the same. That GOD can perform that Annihilation, is neither disputed, nor Part of our Question here; but we deny the Possibility of the Soul's Existence after that Thinking, the Life and Essence thereof, is taken away. 1. They who consider the Human Soul in this Light, consequently suppose it immortal, continually in Action, and self-conscious, until it be reduced into nothing.

Those who independently of this Thinking Quality, or vital Energy, (if we may use that Expression) ascribe to the Soul Extension and Dimensions, antecedent to Thought, may look to it, how well they prove a future Life therefrom. By Life I do not mean simple Duration, common to Stocks and Stones: It is one Thing to exist in that Manner, and another to Think, by which only we understand Immortality and a future Life.

But if we grant an extended Substance independent of Life and Thought, we must consider it either as external, or flowing from the particular Favour of GOD, That after the Separation from the Body, it shall have, or be without those Properties. I shall not here contend with these Gentlemen, provided they hurt not the Notion of the Immortality, whether it come from Grace or from Nature.



## 16 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

It will fall to my Share to contend with a Set of Men, whose Zeal to destroy this Immortality is much at Heart; they not only give the Soul Extension, but make it really corporeal, and equally perishable as that: And though I look upon these Men as the declared Enemies of Human Nature, yet even with an Enemy, Rules are to be observed; and therefore declining sharp and angry Words, I shall fairly and impartially examine what they have to say. We might here, to reduce the Question into as few Terms as possible, lay it down as a Maxim, that there is an Incorporeity in Nature. But as Concessions may not always chance to draw, without the Force of Conviction to drive, we shall first prove that GOD is not corporeal; from which Foundation we shall proceed to come at the true Nature of the Soul.

If it is absurd to suppose, that the World without Counsel and without Art made it self; it is not less absurd to give the Counsel and Wisdom that formed the World, to blind and stupid Matter: Yet it is the Way of some to be affected with no Reason that does not touch their Senses, and grossly affect their Imaginations. But to state this fairly, if GOD is corporeal, he is either the whole Mass of the material World, taken together, or a Part or Species, or a particular Kind thereof; but the last will not hold, because there is no immutable Kind of Matter, for all Matter is substantially the same, into whatsoever Variety of Modes and Qualities it is changed. The hard may soften and become even Liquid; and the most thin and subtle Parts may congeal, and the fluid stagnate: For by intervening Qualities, Motion it self may pass from one Body to another: There is no settled, fixed, nor unchangeable Position of Matter. This Hypothesis

rhelis  
and pe  
dition,  
the Im  
which  
present  
filled b  
divided  
thereof  
will div  
of: And  
and div  
Division  
one sing  
But eith  
and Lab  
You  
Quantit  
you plea  
Mass int  
and mak  
animate  
a Deity  
For they  
tues the  
the God  
Scabbard  
make hin  
your Fee  
der, bru  
passive S  
sensible t  
son by th  
impiety t  
whole W  
animate



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 17

thelis therefore makes a *Prophan* God, still varying and perplexing his Forms and Shape, and even Condition, sometimes Stopped and again accelerated by the Impressions thereof. Moreover, that Matter which is not universally extended cannot be omnipresent, and several Hiatuses in the Deity may be filled by other Bodies, and the Godship broken and divided by various Accidents; for if the Substance thereof, is fluid and slender, the more solid Bodies will divide its Parts and dissolve the Continuity thereof: And if solid, the Fluids will continually corrode and divide the same into as many Gods as there are Divisions therein: So that the Deity is entire in one single, or floating upon innumerable Particles. But either Way, the Folly will never quic the Pains and Labour of confuting the same.

You see what a God is made from a particular Quantity of Matter, take and mould it which way you please. Nor is it less absurd to turn the whole Mass into a Divinity: For if you survey the Whole, and make all the celestial and terrestrial Bodies, animate and inanimate, Stone, Wood, Metals, &c. a Deity, you exceed even the Folly of Heathens: For they included in their Marble and Wooden Statues the God they worshipped; but they distinguished the God from the Temple, the Sword from the Scabbard; while you confound all together, and make him to be Eat and Drunk, and trampled under your Feet; to be exposed to burning, cutting asunder, bruising, and all the Impressions made upon a passive Substance; and if Divine, consequently it is sensible thereof. How far we are carried from Reason by this Scheme, I need not say, and even to impiety to ascribe Sufferings to God: And if the whole World is that Deity, he is a Compound of animate and inanimate, base and honourable,  
C pure



18 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

pure and impure, Man, Devil, and all together; but it is time to shake off this disagreeable Subject.

These, and a Thousand more unworthy Sentiments follow this Hypothesis, below the Dignity of GOD, to confound him with Matter. Nor is it less contradictory to common Sense, to exalt that reluctant, base Congeries of unactive Particles into the divine Nature. We all understand by GOD, a Nature infinitely perfect; yet from corporeal Nature, what Perfections can arise, or can any Man senselessly pretend to persuade himself, or shew that Matter can be the Root, Source, or Beginning of Perfection. For, *first*, Matter cannot move it self, nor can it borrow from any thing below its Nature; nor even then, can it exercise any Powers of Motion, but what are distinctly imparted to every Particle. But neither can Divisibility nor Motion from Place to Place agree with Perfection; and if Matter is not endued with Self-motion, how can it include the infinite perfections of Thought, Wisdom, Power, Goodness, and all the rest, inseparable from the Divine Nature.

But it may be said, (that I may omit no Objection) that though Thought is incompatible with our Conception of Matter, as it appears to us, we cannot tell the hidden Powers thereof, too remote for the sharpest Understanding to find out. I answer, the Idea of Matter is the clearest to the Mind of any there; the Dimensions thereof we easily conceive; its Divisibility, Figure, Situation, Proportions, and all the Properties flowing from these, fall within sensible and evident Demonstration: And as to Cogitation, or any of the Properties of Thinking, having demonstrable Connection with these material Qualities, it is a vain Supposition, that this most excel-

lent F  
escape

I wo  
to Ma  
Compe  
Nature  
other I  
or Virt  
rious o  
on Go  
most is  
most in  
howev  
the Pro  
Thoug  
perfect

But  
than F  
is infin  
vate, a  
The fir  
tual Cl  
into in  
Shapes  
from h  
that th  
quentl

This  
may c  
there  
This f  
corpor  
diction  
Sphere  
sible T



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 19

lent Faculty can be so close to a plain Idea, and escape our Knowledge and Conception.

I would say, this most excellent Faculty annexed to Matter, because the rest come not up to the least Competition therewith; for it constitutes the divine Nature, and whatever is great in Man; but these other Faculties are senseless, dull, and without Force or Virtue, if we take away that great and most glorious one from material Beings; and we reflect upon God for giving us only an imperfect, and the most ignoble Part of an Idea, and concealing the most inestimable Part from human Knowledge. But however, it is not really so, for we have an Idea of the Properties of Matter, and what are not so; as Thought, and other Properties thereof, they are perfectly distinct in all Respects.

But to proceed: there is rather an absolute Enmity than Friendship between them. The divine Nature is infinitely perfect, the corporeal is impotent, enervate, and exposed to the Insults of external Powers: The first is immutable, and this obnoxious to perpetual Changes; that simple and uniform, this formed into innumerable Modifications, Compositions, and Shapes; so that Divinity and Corporiety are so far from having Connection, Affinity, and Similitude, that they are repugnant to each other, and consequently *God is incorporeal*.

This being laid down as a Foundation, that we may come to our Purpose, we 2dly affirm, That there may be other incorporeal Beings besides God. This follows from the Premises, for if God is incorporeal, an incorporeal Nature is not a Contradiction; and if no Contradiction, it is within the Sphere of Possibility; but the Production of a possible Thing is not impossible; and as God is omnipotent,



## 20 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

potent, it is in himself, by his own Act, to produce what is possible.

3dly, We affirm, *The human Soul is an incorporeal Substance.* I might have inserted an intermediate Proposition, viz. That other incorporeal Substances than God, are not only possible, but really subsist; and then to have added, That such is the human Soul: But we shall include both under this Head.

First, There are actually in the Universe other incorporeal Beings than God. As no Contradiction is in the Way, nothing could influence the Great GOD of Heaven, after he had created the World, to leave it imperfect, and in a manner, unfurnished, without incorporeal Beings. For if a Man should build a fine and magnificent Seat, and fill the Inside thereof, instead of curious Household Stuff, with the meanest Wooden-ware and the most sordid Furniture, he would be esteemed either poor, miserably covetous, or mad: Nor can we think the Creator of all Things, in adorning and compleating the Workmanship of his own Hands, would omit the most great and useful Part, to fill it with incorporeal Beings. Could he want Power, or Good-nature to finish what he had begun? Surely there was a Chasm to fill up that vast Distance between the infinite Divine Nature, and low senseless Matter; here was room for innumerable Orders of glorious Beings, whom to omit, would fall below the Dignity and Honour of God. Moreover, there are in Nature many Phenomenons too low for God, and above Matter, which require intermediate Powers and secondary Causes, superiour to all corporeal ones: But to insist on these does not belong to this Place.

Having thus paved the Way, we come to the Conclusion, upon which the whole Argument turns, *That the Human Soul is amongst those incorporeal Sub-*  
stances,

stances,  
troverfi  
Class of  
The  
In what  
is to tak  
are in a  
by no o  
internal  
and Pro  
therefor  
in both  
find out  
Well  
included

\* But  
we must  
our Powe  
Existence,  
same: Bu  
in our Mi  
ving, and  
I am, bei  
1st, I k  
I commun  
of Sensati  
fation, I  
the rest th  
ly die, by  
Over an  
communio  
distinct fr  
perfect on  
standing a  
Perception  
Therefore  
long to fo  
must conf



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 21

stances, or one of them. For the Hinge of the Controversy turns upon this, *Whether the Soul is in the Class of Corporeal or Incorporeal Beings.*\*

The Question is now reduced into these Bounds, *In what Class, whether corporeal or incorporeal, the Soul is to take its Place?* But as the Essences of Things are in a great measure concealed from us, and we can by no other Means come into a Knowledge of their internal Relation to each other, than by the Effects and Properties within our Knowledge; we must therefore first compare those Properties and Effects in both our corporeal and incorporeal Nature, and find out their Diversity from each other.

We have before observed, that Thought is not included in the Idea of a corporeal Nature; neither

\* But to make this more clearly, and more distinctly appear, we must reflect upon our selves, what we are, and what are our Powers. Every one is conscious of himself and of his own Existence, and in the very Act of doubting, he confirms the same: But what we are, who by the various Operations in our Minds of doubting, willing, refusing, rejoicing, grieving, and thinking, confess our selves something; I say, what I am, being subject to all these Affections, is the Question.

1<sup>st</sup>, I know that I am a Being distinct from all others, and I communicate neither in Pain nor Pleasure, nor in any Modes of Sensation with any other Being; I have more or less Sensation, I have my distinct Province of Will to my self, and the rest theirs; I am well, sick, hungry, eat, sleep, and finally die, by my self alone.

Over and above this active and passive Consciousness, incommunicably and properly my own, I say I am individually distinct from any other Being; distinct from GOD, as an imperfect one, subject to Errours and Frailties, both in Understanding and Will; and distinct from any other, as having no Perception of Thought or Sense in common with them. Therefore these Affections of which I am conscious, must belong to some Substance, and as the Substance is not GOD, it must consequently be a Created, Corporeal, or Incorporeal one.



has Thought any corporeal Properties: And therefore the Author of Nature has deceived us on one Side or the other, if Thought belong to Matter. And, unless we would pretend to know beyond, or in Opposition to our Faculties, we cannot find any Reason from the Consideration of our Idea's to annex Thought to our corporeal Beings. Though perhaps you may object, that we find Things out by Experience, that do not flow from our Idea's: If so we do not find by Experience the Activity and Passivity of our Understanding to be after a material Manner; neither does Matter act after the Manner of Sensation and Thought, Matter is affected by Motion, Tacture, and Impulse; but we can by no means find out that the Mind is affected in that Manner, by Tacture, Impulse, and Motion: For when I voluntarily move my Finger, Tongue, or any Member of my Body, I am not conscious of any Impulse, or Force of the Mind acting upon that Body: There is indeed a Motion of the Spirits, and of the Nervous Juice from whence that corporeal Motion arises; but how shall we come at the Origine of the Motion of those Spirits in the Brain, which is entirely in themselves, and proceed from an Action of the Mind; and I am conscious of no other mental Action than the Will, but I can by no means find that Will driven or pushed forwards by material Effects, or in the same manner Motion is generated in Bodies; and as for the Passions of the Soul, and the Impressions made thereon by material Objects, these have nothing in common with local Motion: For Example, Grief and Sorrow contract the Heart, and Joy and Gladness, dilate the same; but neither this Contraction, nor that Dilation are in the Soul, which is not muscular and composed of Fibres and Tendons: We have a conscious

scious  
tion;  
Distin

Final  
and So  
tion t  
Images  
transfo  
tine Di  
ception  
Percep  
can the  
make  
the sa  
mory,  
ginal  
Laws  
must

Th  
Huma  
sion, v  
is imp  
man b

For  
Princi  
the co

Th  
all th  
to av  
Princi  
tions  
the M  
rest n  
fect R

W  
nto f



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 23

scious Sense of Pain, but it has no Idea of local Motion; it has an entire Independant one of its own, Distinct from the Idea of Motion.

Finally, In external Sensations, as Tasting, Smells, and Sounds, the Affection of the Soul has no Relation to the Idea of Matter, or of Motion. The Images of external Objects within the Eye are not transfered by an equal Motion, and in the same entire Disposition into the Brain, or wherever the Perception of the Soul is placed; the Images and the Perception of these Images, are not the same: Nor can the more confused ones, by their combined Force, make a distinct Representation in the Mind: And the same Reason holds in those Images in the Memory, that are impaired and lose much of their original Patterns; that cannot be accounted for by the Laws of corporeal Extension and Figure, and they must have an Operation of another Nature.

Thus much concerning the first Operation of Human Understanding, I call it *simple Apprehension*, whether it is a pure and abstracted Idea, or is implicated with Matter, and Motion in a Human Body.

For we have not only simple Idea's but combined Principles and Faculties, as Judgement, Reason, and the consequential Operations thereof.

There is a principle that directs and presides over all these, called by the *Greeks*, τὸ ἡγεμονικόν and τὸ ἀντεχόν, the leading, commanding, absolute Principle of the Mind: This directs all the Operations thereof, and extends likewise its Power over the Motion of the Body. This Principle and the rest must be carefully examined, to arrive at a perfect Knowledge of the Nature of the Soul.

We must divide the mental Operations regularly into simple Apprehension, Judgment, and Reason-



## 24 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

ing, and into Method: That is, the Series of Human Thoughts, as they are disposed in the Mind. Method disposes the numerous Ratiocinations, they in their Turn connect the several Judgements, and those Judgements compare and compound several Idea's together; so that the simple Idea's are the first Elements of Reason, as the Letters of the Alphabet are of Reading; they compound single Sentences, those Sentences form perfect Periods, and those Periods perfect Discourses. Thus answers the Scale of Thought to the several Parts of Human Speech.

Concerning Idea's I have already spoken: We must next come to Judgement and Reasoning, in which the Mind considers the Relation Idea's have to each other; for taken by themselves they have no Efficacy or Force, either to deny, conclude, or affirm any rational Truth: This is another Action or Faculty of the Mind, which, by the comparing Idea's together, forms Conclusions either concerning them or the things they represent, by contemplating the mutual Congruity or Incongruity they have amongst themselves. But if these Idea's are Particles of Matter, moved too and fro, is this Relation of Idea's attached to them as an Appendix to that Matter; and what is that grand Principle or Judge that presides over these Idea's, compares, examines, and compounds them into Propositions and the various Combinations of Reason?

Lastly, What shall we say to this progressive Operation in our Thoughts, from simple Perception to Judgement; from Judgement to Ratiocination; is this performed by the Impulse of one Part of the Soul upon the other, according to the Laws of Motion? It is impossible to believe so absurd an Opinion: For examine your Soul, and find if you can reconcile

reconcil  
the Col  
Soul can  
are con  
own se  
Dignity  
the just  
Iniquity  
these E  
but are  
and the  
numero  
But to  
self, let  
naked;  
selves;  
which a  
of more  
tions an  
son and  
From  
plificat  
Mind i  
judging  
son, a  
Thoug  
out thi  
them c  
other,  
taken i  
2dly,  
the Bra  
mutual

\* I b  
For the



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 25

reconcile these Operations by contact Impulse, or the Collision of Bodies against each other. The Soul cannot tell you the Laws of material Motion are concerned in this Affair, unless it lies against its own self, and is in a Conspiracy against its own Dignity and Honour; and then that Depression is the just Punishment, as well as Consequence of its Iniquity. It must otherwise, I say, confess, That these Effects proceed not from corporeal Power, but are under the Influence of a thinking Nature, and the working of our Idea's, that bring forth the numerous Superfutations in our cogitative System. But to confirm this Testimony the Soul gives of its self, let us reflect upon the Nature of simple Idea's, naked, abstracted, and distinct as they are in themselves; they are not the Idea's of Truth, and Falsehood, which are complex, and proceed from a Disposition of more Idea's, compared and formed into Propositions and Judgements in the Mind, from these Reason and Speech are derived.

From what has been said we have 1<sup>st</sup>, An Amplification of Reason, and of the Powers of the Mind in comparing, contemplating, separating and judging Idea's; from whence all improves into Reason, and the whole Series and Concatenation of Thought depends thereon; The simple Idea's without this are as uncemented Sand; but what makes them cohere, are the Relations they have to each other, worked up into the Understanding, and there taken in, become Parts of intellectual Perception.

2<sup>dly</sup>, We must observe, these complex Images in the Brain and on the Fancy, compounded from these mutual Relations, have \* no corporeal Dimensions and

---

\* I believe *nullas* is put down for *mutuas* in the Original: For the Fancy is the Field of the Understanding, and takes in a larger



## 26 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

and Parts. The original Terms may be represented as a Triangle and Square in the Mind, but who can paint or graphically describe the rational Proportion or Habitude these have to each other, or to a third; this is the Operation of Reason in the Mind, and cannot be marked out by Lines or material Dimensions †.

As the Prophet says, *To whom then shall we liken GOD, or what Likeness will you compare unto him?* *Is.* xl. 18. So I may say, what Similitude of a Similitude, or what Image of abstracted Proportion can be drawn out in a Draught upon the Brain, or upon any other Chart or Surface of Matter. The Reasons of Good and Evil, Base and Honest, Possibility and Impossibility, and all those universal Ideas generated by Reflection, have no Relations in the Brain, no

a larger Scope than the Field of simple Painting in the Mind. But if the Dr. was wrong, I have endeavoured to put him right. I am sure a Man with a dull Fancy will be a dull Reasoner.

† He is certainly right, for it is the Act it self and not the Subject produced from the Act in the Mind. For as *Pythagoras* found out the 47 Prop. 1. *Euclid* by accidentally placing two Squares upon a Third; and finding them exactly quadrate, his first Act was mechanical, but the Deduction and succeeding Demonstration was an immaterial Operation of the Mind, and distinct from the Subject demonstrated to be so, and cannot be graphically described, as all Representations of material Objects can: It therefore necessarily follows, That rational Deductions can be the Effects only of an immaterial Being. The Argument is admirably good, and shall be illustrated and pursued when I come to the end of this Chapter. But when the Subject likewise is immaterial, how can a material Idea belong thereto? *i. e.* How can the Representation of what has Dimensions, be the Image of what has no Demensions: For no Man is said to be six Yards honest, or ten Yards square in his Dimensions of Piety. Therefore material Thought can never measure or represent immaterial Ideas.

Shadow,

Shadow  
enough

Thus  
Mind in  
to Judge  
System  
and Sci  
and Pre  
These  
disting  
Implica  
great  
Mind  
Motion  
absolut  
By this  
rits con  
sist the  
have to

But  
strains  
dy; w  
divert  
contra  
alone,  
of M  
ledge  
if it  
Plan,  
brings

Th  
come  
self  
Whe  
telle



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 27

Shadow, Form or Figure therein. But of this enough.

Thus far we have pursued the Gradation of the Mind in all its Operations, from simple Perception to Judgement, Reason, and the whole compounded System of Thinking, through every Series to the Arts and Sciences, and all the Proposition that in Theory and Practice relate to the Conduct of human Affairs. These Virtues and Powers of the Mind we admire, distinguished from the corporeal Machines and the Implications of Matter. Let us now return to that great and governing Principle that presides in the Mind over the corporeal Machines, and directs the Motions thereof: This is what I called before το αὐτεξούριον, and the Latins, *Liberum Arbitrium*; the absolute and uncontrolled Will of the Understanding. By this Principle the Body is governed, and the Spirits commanded away to their Posts: By this we resist the Propensities, Appetites, and Affections that have too near a Relation to our Bodies.

But what is this that governs, over-rules, and restrains the Body, if we have nothing in us but Body; when a River flows in a Current, it cannot be diverted by any proper Will of its own, into a contrary Channel, Matter cannot work upon itself alone, nor is any Machine conscious of the Springs of Motion in its own Bowels, and from a Knowledge thereof able to correct and amend the same; if it once goes wrong, it pursues that erroneous Plan, till the more intelligent Hand of the Master brings it back into a right State.

This reflective Principle, as I call it, can never come within the Description of Mechanism; this self conscious Power, transcends the Springs and Wheels of Machines, and is proper only to an intellectual Nature, and is indeed the greatest and most



28 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

most divine Part thereof. But I do not only admire this Principle, as presiding over, and governing Matter: but what is more excellent still; it governs the Mind itself; and as the supreme Judge directs the Motion of one, and the Actions of the other by its Sovereign Will\*.

As to our own Thoughts, and the Operations of the Mind, we find in our selves, that by an innate Force, Will, and Power, we apply the Mind to the Pursuit of any particular Subject; we dwell longer thereon, or stop short, and turn to another, as we please. Moreover, it is to be observed, that this absolute Principle our Free-will sometimes calls Reason into its Consultations; and when it neglects so to do, and pursues the utmost Licence of Power, it hurries the whole System into Ruin: But in Concert with Reason, it acts with some faint Resemblance to the Wisdom and Power of God; it corrects the Error of the Will, and of our Senses, and of Affections, proceeding from corrupt Imagination: And in this the Power of the divine Soul shines forth in every Action or Passion of the Soul, in even the most low and abject of all our Sensations and Appetites, it is still superior to the Body. I say this conscious and perceiving Principle above Matter, and all materialised Affections, when it carries us to the Perfection of our Nature, we leave the Earth

---

\* When we sleep, the Thoughts irregularly ramble over the Fancy, without Coherence, or the Command of Reason; when we wake, this Principle reassumes the Government over the Thoughts, moderates, stops, and corrects their wild Flights, and brings them back, rejecting the absurd, and connecting the rest into a rational Series and Order; What is this superior Power awing in the Body, and directing the Mind, but the Sovereign Queen, Human Understanding.

and

and ear  
wards H  
ganical  
This bei  
this Arg

We h  
Principle  
ver all t  
mand wh  
It is one  
external  
ing, and  
pression  
tainly th  
Simplic  
ons wit  
Intuitio  
of Thin  
formity  
must be  
which,  
der the  
Impres  
Confu  
Nor ca  
the Im  
ring,  
other

\* To  
with M  
Thinki  
ture: I  
Bodies  
id and  
wandr



and earthly Things beneath our Feet, and rise towards Heaven absorbed therein, and freed from organic Construction, and Mechanical Servitude\*. This being laid down, we shall proceed to finish this Argument.

We have in our selves that universal conscious Principle, penetrating and diffusing into, and over all the Actions and Passions of the Mind: I demand what this Being is? Is it a Particle of Matter? It is one and the same Thing, which perceives all external Objects, has the Power of judging, reasoning, and determining upon them, receives all Impressions, exerts all the Actions of the Soul: Certainly this universal Principle must have inexpressible Simplicity and Unity, to receive so many Impressions without Confusion, and to have within its own Intuition, the innumerable Reasons and Relations of Things. No Part of Matter is capable of this Uniformity and Simplicity; whatsoever is received, must be modelled after the Manner of the Receiver, which, according to the Diversity of its Parts, render the Impression broken and confused: If all the Impression falls upon one single Point, it will cause Confusion, and if upon more than one, Distraction: Nor can one single Point take into its Perception, the Impression of the entire Object; for in comparing, judging, and perceiving, either external or other Objects, this single Point must pervade, ap-

---

\* To proceed, Thought has two Properties incompatible with Matter, (*viz.*) Action, and Simplicity in that Action. Thinking is an Action of the most simple and unaffected Nature: Matter is either entirely void of Action as hard and solid Bodies are, or if otherwise, they are still void of Unity, as fluid and volatile Matter, which consists of heterogenous Particles, wandering up and down without Unity and Connexion,

prehend,



50 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

prehend, connect, or divide the Filaments of these Objects; and in all this Variety of Operations, there must be a common Energy or Power that pervades the whole, and is the Soul of even the Soul it self. This universal Principle, must have an absolute Simplicity and Unity incompatible with any extended divisible Substance \*.

Upon the Whole, with all possible Brevity discussed, it is evident to me, that the Mind is not only of another Nature, but superiour to the Body in all Respects; whether we consider the Idea's of both, or the Operations of the Soul, or that universal conscious Principle in every Man. There are many other Arguments used by learned Men, and indeed invincible ones, to prove the Distinction of the Soul from the Body, or any Part thereof. The Soul is certainly permanent, and † numerically the same always; but the Parts of the Body are subject to decay, falling away, and a Succession of new ones, ignorant of all that has passed in the new Station, they have taken up.

But why need we insist on these, when the Christian Religion is full and express, as to the Immortality of the Soul, and the Distinction thereof from the Body, both in its Beginning and End. In the Birth of Man, the holy Text distinguishes the Soul from the Body, when it says, *God formed the Body from the Earth, and breathed the Soul into the same*, Gen. ii. 7. And likewise upon the Dissolution of the human Composition, it sends each Part distinctly from whence they came. *Then shall the Dust re-*

\* See Suarez, de Substantiis Intermediis.

† The Doctor makes a little too free with the Word Numerical, in applying it to the Substance of the Soul; he moreover a little, in my Opinion, begs the Question.

turn to  
to God  
has told  
ed by  
that Na  
Death  
God,  
xxiii.  
of Abra  
were al  
of Abra  
and per  
and Geh  
c. xxiii.  
tal Life  
John xi.  
Bodies  
Body af  
in full  
Christ  
stinctio  
ving af

\* W  
ture,  
Soul, w  
The Se  
nal Ob  
Death,  
only w  
on the  
Shape,

\* It  
Life pro  
Departu  
See 1 Th



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 31

turn to the Earth as it was, and the Spirit shall return to God who gave it, Eccles. xii. 7. Therefore Christ has told us, *The Body may be destroyed and extinguished by Men, and the Soul remain free from Injuries of that Nature*, Matth. x. 28. And therefore at his Death he recommended his Spirit into the Hands of God, while his Body hung upon the Cross, Luke xxiii. 46. He has likewise told us, that the Souls of Abraham and the Patriarchs at least in his Time, were alive, Matth. xxii. 32. And gives the Bosom of Abraham and of Paradise, for the Seat of pious and penitential Souls, released from their Bodies, and Gehenna or Hell for the Wicked, Luke xvi. 22. c. xxiii. 43. Moses and Elias long after this mortal Life, appeared at the Transfiguration of Christ, John xi. 43. He moreover called Souls back to their Bodies again at his Pleasure, and resumed his own Body after Three Days, and ascended into Heaven in full Life and Glory, Matth. ix. 25. So that Christ both in Words and Facts, testified the Distinction of the Soul from the Body, and its surviving after Death.

\* Whereas the Dead are said to sleep in the Scripture, this does not affect the Immortality of the Soul, which still acts in the strongest Bonds of Sleep: The Senses are confined, and not affected by external Objects, which may be the Case in a State of Death, or in the separate State, when we converse only with God, and the intellectual World; till on the Resurrection we assume a visible corporeal Shape, then we open and renew our Commerce with

---

\* It appears from Holy Scriptures, that the Dead have a Life proper to them, and that the intermediate State from the Departure from the Body to the Resurrection, is a Sort of Life. See 1 Thess. v. 10.

the



## 32 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

the external World, being restored thereto by Christ, who is the Lord of the Living, and of the Dead: But of these Things hereafter.

To conclude, the Notion of the Distinction of Soul and Body, is taken according to the different Capacity and Genius of Men; and if any Person has an Inclination to doubt of the Existence of his own Body, and of all external Appearances, he nevertheless must be certain of the Existence of his own Soul, from whence it is apparent, they have no indissoluble Connection: The very doubting creates a Certitude of Existence; for the very Action or Operation, proves the Existence of the Subject of that Action; and the most obstinate *Scepticks* will not go so far, as to doubt of their own Existence. Let them therefore take away the Sun and Stars, and all the external World with them, even Body and all, there still remains that thinking Substance, that sweeps away the rest, and will not march in the Train of non-existing Beings, destroyed by that Substance, in doubting whether they exist or not. This is that incorporeal Substance, independant of corporeal Dissolution, but possessed of its own proper Life, survives immortal, and capable of eternal Happiness and Misery.

### R E M A R K S.

I am very much afraid, from the Experience I have had of the Wickedness of Mankind, and the Impiety and Contempt of another World in Men of Education, and in other Cases of distinguished Sense, that too many are apt to doubt of even the Immateriality of any Being whatsoever, much more of the Immateriality of the Soul, and more than even that, of a future State.

I shall be as clear in distinguishing this Chapter, as I can, because I would make Men feel what they are, the only Method to bring them into a Sense of Religion.

That



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 433

1. That the Soul is an immortal Substance, independant of the Body.

This is the Proposition to be proved, because it consequently follows from thence, that it does subsist, when the Organs of the Body are destroyed, which can be pretended to affect it in any Manner; or at least, that it is no Contradiction, that it does subsist in that Manner; an important Step towards proving a future State.

He says, we find nothing in the Soul, but Thought and the Powers thereof; 7. 2. All the Operations of the Mind are distinct from Matter: That is, they have no Dependence upon the known Properties of Matter. This is the most safe and modest Way of proceeding: Because I cannot admire the Forwardness of some who pretend to know all the Properties of Matter, who measure, and lay it out as with a Line, when we can come only at the superficial Properties thereof, after all our Search and Labour; and it is sufficient that we know some of the essential Properties of Matter. A great many more may be hidden from us, and for ought I know Cohesion it self may be one, however philosophically and mathematically we pretend to prove it. And if we take Extension from Matter, we either annihilate or transubstantiate the same; and if the Soul is not extended as a Body is, it is not Matter; and if it is extended as a Body is, the Operations thereof must be attended with material Extension.

By material Extension, I mean a determinate Quantity of Space filled up, and exactly measured, by a Substance that has distinct Properties from Space.

Consequently Extension must always attend this Substance; or the Definition falls to the Ground.

I say, if Extension is the Property of any Substance, the Extension must remain with that Substance; and take away Extension, the Substance ceases to be. For Extension has the same Effect as Numeration, for it divides the Substance infinitely into Parts; and while the Parts remain, the Extension remains; and when Extension is taken away, the Parts are taken away likewise; and if the Parts, the Whole: And if you take away Extension and Parts, what remains? If any Thing, it must be an immaterial Substance; and if nothing, it is Space: And this is Annihilation, if the Body is not moved so as to fill another Quantity of Space, by Rarefaction, Denotation, or Translation from one Place to another.

By Rarefaction, the Extension measures more Space with new Accession of Parts; by Denotation it measures fewer Parts: Yet



# 34 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

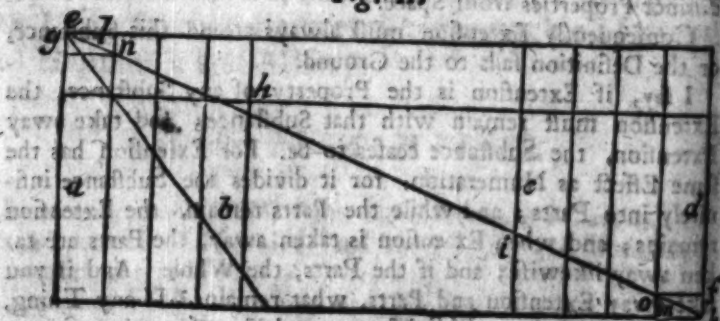
every individual Part is equally measured and extended as before: So that Alteration in Bodies is not internal, but external and accidental. For one Particle in the Earth, another in the Sea, are equally measured by their essential Extension, whatever Bodies are interposed between; and Rarefaction and Den- sation is no more than interposing or taking away intermediate Parts: So that Extension is an essential Property of Matter, and no Transposition of Parts can take away or destroy the same. For Extension has as indissoluble a Relation to the Parts of Matter, as Numbers have to the Things numbered: For if I say, Such a Distance measures ten Foot; I must either take away five Foot, or the whole ten remain.

I would have the Reader consider carefully what I have here said: for it is the first Entrance into all the Knowledge we in our present State can have of Body and Spirit, and consequent- ly, of all the States each must undergoe, or are capable of.

I would have the Reader observe, I have confined my self only to the Definition of material Extension; and I lay this down as a Maxim:

That if Extension, which measures Space, applied to any Substance, measures that Substance numerically, in the same Proportion it measures Space, as certainly as a right Line fall- ing upon two parallel Lines, divides them proportionally. I say, this Maxim is equal to Mathematical Demonstration; nay, moreover, is really such; as will appear by the following Diagram.

Fig. A.



Let the entire Area of this Parallelogram be supposed Space void of any Substance, even Air it self, and measured out by the Almighty to be filled up with Substance, equally the same: Let the two Parallelograms *a b*, *c d* be made equal, it is evi-

dent th  
and con  
two equ  
that mak  
ternate T  
alternate  
equal Par  
in Euclid  
the Exten  
whole Pa  
But w  
different  
remain v  
Substance  
grammatic  
tionally m  
grams; as  
gles that d  
ceed infin  
I m, and i  
numerical  
how Subst  
gether see  
ther. This  
in asserting  
likewise it  
form an Id  
est Distanc  
still numer  
that Proper  
Extension  
Properties  
tension, son  
not act wit  
tion of bein  
stance, all it  
tical Laws  
fixed this S  
Body, and t  
This bring  
rations of the  
terially exten  
Doctor has  
explained.



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 35

dent the Diagonal  $ef$  divides the Area into two equal Parts; and consequently the Substance is by that Line divided into two equal Parts, contained within the two equal Triangles, that make up the whole Area of the Parallelogram. The alternate Triangles  $g, h, i, k$  are equal, and by the same Rules the alternate Triangles  $l, m$  will be equal, and proportionally divide equal Parts of that Substance *in infinitum*: And by this Axiom in *Euclid*, that the Parts are equal to the Whole; it is evident, the Extension measures the Substance numerically, through the whole Parallelogram.

But we will suppose the Space to be only in Part filled with different Kinds of Substance, and that the two Triangles  $n, o$  remain void Space still; and let the Triangles  $l, m$  be a fluid Substance, suppose Air, take away all the rest of the parallelogrammatick Space, the two Triangles being equal, are proportionally measured by the Extension of Half the little Parallelograms; as the whole great Parallelogram is by the two Triangles that divide the same in Halves. And thus you may proceed infinitely, suppose some void Space even in the Triangles  $l, m$ , and it still follows, that Extension measures the Substance numerically through the Whole. And this makes it out plain, how Substance and a Vacuum are measured by Extension together seemingly, and yet are entirely separated from each other. This might have saved *Des Cartes* his wrong Hypothesis, in asserting Space and Substance to be the same. From hence likewise it follows, That the least Particle of Matter you can form an Idea of in the Imagination, being carried to the greatest Distance from another by Dissipation or Rarefaction, it is still numerically measured by Extension, and can never lose that Property.

Extension alone is void of all Properties, therefore if any Properties flow from within the Space, measured by that Extension, some Substance must be there; because Properties cannot act without a Subject: And if it comes under the Definition of being measured by Extension, this is a material Substance, all its Operations are confined to Laws, strict Mathematical Laws, and cannot act as Spirits do; for as we have once fixed this Substance by Extension, we shall look upon it as a Body, and treat it as such.

This brings me to my great Argument of all, *That the Operations of the Mind are such as cannot flow from a Substance materially extended.* And when I have done with this, most that the Doctor has said in this Chapter will be included, and clearly explained.



# 36 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

1<sup>st</sup>. *Idea's are Images of Things in the Understanding*: It remains to be examined, Whether they are material or no; and for the Reasons I shall bring, they will appear not to be so.

The Originals must first be enquired into, what they are. External material Objects form Images in the Mind of Extension and colour only, at the first Impression; the other Properties are worked up afterwards by Reflection and Judgement. For Instance, a Guinea makes at first no other Image in the Mind than of a yellow circular, equal Superficies, multiplied by the Extent of a very little Part of its Circumference into Depth: The other Properties follow from Contemplation, Feeling, and Experience, and all the wonderful Agitations it makes in the Mind of a poor Man when it is put into his Hands, and much more in a Villain, when it makes him abandon Humanity, Duty, and Love, even for Posterity and his Country.

To return from a very harsh and disagreeable Observation, I was speaking of the First Impressions of material Objects: An Idea is only an Image of an Image, strictly considered; for the Image painted in the Eye is only a different Modification of the Rays of Light reflected from an External Object, and transmitted through the Coats and Humours of the Eye to the Retina, where it stops, and makes a Concussion upon the Optick Nerve, whose harmonious Fibres communicate to the Brain different Species of Sights: So far, at least, if we go, the external Object never enters the Eye, the Rays of Light are the Messengers to inform the Optick Nerve what Object is before the Eye, and the Optick Nerve informs the Brain; and when the Object departs from that Situation, the Image is recommended to the Memory: so that the Idea is properly an Image of a Thing conveyed to the Understanding by Report, and therefore can be no material Object let into the Brain: If it is formed there afterwards, as it must be, if it is material, and not let in as such into the Brain, we shall have Workings enough of Absurdities to make out this Hypothesis. As to the Correspondence between the Brain and an immaterial Being, though it is wonderful, beyond the Powers of human Reason to conceive, I can submit; but we know so much of the Powers of Matter, that we will not allow any Powers thereof to contradict Mathematical Demonstrations.

For let the Optick Nerve shake all the Fibres in the Brain in what Manner soever you please; you may as well say, a Spinnet can make an Idea, as the Brain; here must be Matter ready to supply for the Idea, it must be formed into the perfect Shape of the external Object, mathematically true, as to serve

for all the  
of Mathem  
If the  
Anger, the  
the Heart  
ever strong

Likewi  
tion of th  
but in wh  
guish wor  
an Ideor  
Laws of

There  
ther Subst  
in it self  
and Propo

in an imm  
Contradict  
but that a  
tradition

ries witho  
Is an I  
stance, it  
by which

derstandin  
Virtue: ha  
Idea can  
Matter an

ing forme  
it submit  
not mater  
standing

cannot be  
the Under  
This le

ration of  
independ  
without be  
&c. If v  
the mater

For I  
Matter; p  
pressed on  
and insepa



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 837

for all the Laws of Perspective; and all this done by a Parcel of Mathematical Strings laid cross each other.

If the Mind raises a Ferment in the Body with the Passion of Anger, the Spirits still move according to the Law of Mechanism; the Heart dilates and contracts in that mechanical Manner; however strong the Idea of the Injury works upon the Mind.

Likewise the Mind is elevated or depressed by the Disposition of the Organs, from whence Organical Motion flows; but in what manner, is it effected, to think slowly, to distinguish words, and to turn the Creature almost sometimes into an Ideot; is still all in its own Way, and according to the Laws of human Understanding.

There is a great Difference between Matter influencing another Substance to act in its own Way, and Matter producing in it self an Action inconsistent with its own known Laws and Properties. That Matter may excite an immaterial Idea in an immaterial Substance, is what we may grant without a Contradiction, because the Manner is above human Perception; but that an immaterial Idea can flow from Matter is a Contradiction, because its Immateriality is stripped of those Properties without which Matter never works.

Is an Idea a Substance in it self, or only relative to a Substance? Is it the Effect of a certain Operation of the Mind, by which we have the Images of Things lodged in the Understanding? You may as well say, if the Case be so, That Virtue has Relation to a Triangle, a Square, &c. as that an Idea can be relative to the Formation of any Figure, that is Matter and endued with Motion: The Act of the Understanding forms the Idea of Virtue, yet it is no tangible Substance; it submits neither to Motion nor Extension; it operates, but not materially in a relative Manner, to the Act of the Understanding, that forms that compound Idea: It is plain an Idea cannot be relative to an Operation of Matter, unless we grant the Understanding to be an Operation of Matter.

This leads me on to another Question concerning the Operation of Matter, *Whether it can have secret Properties that operate independent of the known Shackles we see it entangled withal, i. e. without being fettered by Extension, by particular Laws of Motion?* &c. If we once grant this, a new Scheme for spiritualizing the material World at once is formed.

For I have before proved, That Extension is inseparable from Matter; and I now come to prove, That when Motion is impressed on Matter, that Motion is to be reduced into essential and inseparable Laws.

Q 3

Motion



# 38 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Motion is only a Property Matter is capable of; and God has given Motion to created Beings; which Motion lays hold on some Part of Matter, and others it passes over, and to the rest it is communicated in different Degrees, till it is sunk, spent or lost. I am speaking only of the lesser Motion; and not of those supreme Laws of Attraction and Gravitation God has impressed on the Universe.

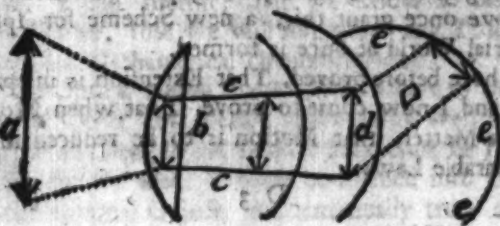
It is let loose from Flints by Collision, it is preserved in the Bowels of the Earth, renewed by continual Fermentations; it is locked up in the vegetative Life, and preserved in the animal Kinds from one Generation to another, through the whole World: If it is one general, uniform Principle, it may be reduced to Laws; and though they may by *Des Cartes* and Sir *Isaac Newton* be called Seven, or Three, the greater Number makes no Irregularity or Contradiction; for they are multiplied by *Des Cartes* for want of Clearness, and reduced by Sir *Isaac Newton* into Three for Simplicity; still the greater Number is virtually contained in the less.

Therefore unless God has not in all Cases made them uniform, they are subject to Mathematical Rules, and by them the Pretensions of Mechanical Understanding may be tried.

There is no other way to solve this, than by supposing the Matter to be a Kind of soft Wax, ready to be stamped with the Impression made by the correspondent Filaments of the Optick Nerve in the Brain.

I have helped the *Lucians* out here as far as I can; but further we shall be mired in the Difficulties of their Hypothesis: For if the Images be not conveyed away after this stamping, great Confusion will arise from a thousand Impressions upon the same Part of Matter: And if the Nerves, by their own Strength, should cast them off, there must be some Judgement for the Places where the Images are to lie in Order, and not to be crowded one upon another. I must confess the Disorder in a great many Mens Heads may seem to favour this Hypothesis; but this can only suit these raving mad in *Bodlam*. The following Diagram shews the perfect Scheme of this supposed Me-

Fig. B.



chanical

chanical  
with the  
the exte  
the Brain  
on is mad  
supposed

It is ev  
of equal  
Rays of  
directly

This le  
Hypothes  
duce; I n  
Sort of  
calling of  
tion of  
gain. Bu  
move bac  
the Perce  
lie even  
reimembe  
will neve

For all  
performe  
and the s

There  
Operation  
born by  
Way tha  
fore the  
bles; of

From  
to know  
wonderfu  
not Mat

Some  
and that  
true the  
any Phil  
der in w  
tion, or  
upon eac  
stances, t

ban



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 19

chanical Working in the Brain; and we shall find it inconsistent with the known Operations and Laws of Matter: it represents the external Object, & the Retina, & the impressing Fibres in the Brain, & the Extremities of the Fibres where the Impression is made upon the soft Matter; and where the Perception is supposed to be, & the Memory.

It is evident, another Object succeeding in the Room of it, of equal Force, by the Plausibility of Superficies, to reflect the Rays of Light, will, by the Laws of Motion, cast the Idea directly so as to cover the first.

This leads me on to consider, according to this Mechanical Hypothesis, what Effects upon the Memory this would produce; I must suppose the Idea to be Impressions upon a strong Sort of Matter, malleable and not apt to break; I suppose the calling of the Object to Mind again must be a backward Motion of  $f$  from the Memory to  $a$ , the Place of Perception again. But here an Impossibility will arise, for the Body  $f$  to move backwards, without protruding the intermediate one to the Perception before it; and if the Perception and Memory lie even close, the same Objection will remain: If I want to remember a Horse, and an Ass lies before or between, the Horse will never rise up in the Memory.

For all these Motions in the Mind, if Mechanical, must be performed according to the Mechanical Motions of the Fibres; and the same Directions will produce the same Effects.

Therefore, I say, Corporal Schemes can never solve these Operations, because Matter is confined by Extension, and Rubborn by reason of its Impenetrability, and can work no other Way than by protruding other Bodies when it stirs; and therefore the fine Thinking-System will not admit of these Jumbles; of which, more shall be said.

From what has been said, the Idea's are not material: I desire to know how Matter can work upon them, and produce these wonderful Operations of the Understanding, if the Idea's are not Matter themselves.

Some will object, That Matter works upon our Thoughts, and that daily Experience is a sufficient Proof thereof. It is true the inescapable Union of the Soul and Body is far beyond any Philosophy we can have to account for; but let us consider in what Manner it works; it is first by a mutual Operation, or it would be still more abstruse, and the Effects they have upon each other are according to the Manner of distinct Substances, that preserve each their own Laws still.



## 40 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

We come now to prove, That the Operations of the Mind, whether we allow Motion to Matter or not, are of a different Formation therefrom, and cannot come within the Laws of numerical and material Extension.

1<sup>st</sup>. To follow the Doctor's Paragraph close. Whatever are the Operations of the Soul in it self, or externally, they cannot be solved that Way.

I will suppose, That God has given all the necessary Motion to Matter, independant of the common Laws, and of even Gravitation and Attraction; I say, I will grant it only for an Hypothesis; if our Adversaries can make one for themselves with the Help of my Concessions, and yet they will not have enough for their mechanical Scheme when they have done.

One Law we must never relinquish, because if we let a Breach into the Mounds thereof, we open a Way for a grand Contradiction to flow in, viz. That Matter cannot move it self, and that all Matter must be impressed by an intelligent Being, who fixes its Laws.

I will grant therefore, That in the Mind the Angles of Incidence are not equal to the Angles of Reflection; and I will, *pro tempore*, grant even the rest away, and shall adhere only to mention in general, Materiality and Extension.

As for the Actions of the Soul, we must define what we mean by the Word *Soul*.

According to my Hypothesis, the Soul is an independant, immaterial, powerful Being, that performs all the Operations we call the Effects of Thinking.

According to the *Corpuscularian* Hypothesis, the Soul is that particular Disposition of Matter which forms the whole System of what we call *Thinking*.

I have before proved, that Extension is essential to Matter, and numerically divides the same.

1<sup>st</sup>. Therefore as to the internal Operations of the Mind, the comparing and combining Idea's, the Action it self is incompatible with Matter, and the Effects thereof cannot have Materiality and Extension.

The comparing Idea's is an Intuition of the Mind upon the Similitude, and Dissimilitude of Idea's. If I was to form an Idea of an omnipotent, eternal, infinitely good Being; by comparing my Idea of Omnipotence with Power confined by known Laws, that it can act and go no further; Eternal, with the Idea of Corruption and a Dependence upon corruptible Causes; and eternal Goodness, with the Idea of Frailty and Imperfection; I call this Being, with opposite Idea's to the last, God: And

And tho  
in my M  
Resembl  
those com  
neaments  
make us

Well, b  
cause a M  
of Matter  
extended  
same Dim

For In  
Space *g h*  
Quantity  
fore, in  
one Trian  
the same  
Matter, i  
up a Para  
of numer  
self.

If there  
comprehe  
keeps its  
consequen

I lay th  
on of wh  
without M

For if  
vides the  
ration or  
any Action

If Matt  
not produ  
only meas  
taking up  
Similitude  
of Letters  
and placin  
Letters m

If our  
the Idea's  
from Mot  
to reconfu



*Of the STATE of the DEAD.* 41

And though I cannot have a perfect Idea, nor a compleat Image in my Mind of these Attributes; yet the faint and just passing Resemblances form the compound Idea in our Mind; and all those compound Idea's, though faint and obscure, have yet Li- neaments enough to answer the End of human Knowledge, to make us humble, pious and religious.

Well, but this Action of comparing Ideas if material, must cause a Mutability in Matter; and there can be no Mutability of Matter without Motion, and Motion is an Exchange of extended Substance of one Portion of Space for another of the same Dimensions.

For Instance, if the Triangle  $i k$ , Fig. 4, be moved into the Space  $g h$ , and the Triangle  $g h$ , into the Space  $i k$ , the same Quantity of Extension numerically divides the Substance as before, in Proportion to the Quantity moved from the Area of one Triangle into the other, divided by the Diagonal  $a k$ . And the same we may say proportionably of the minute Particles of Matter, in *infinitum*. Every Particle, with its Vacuum, takes up a Parallelogrammatick Space that has the same Proportion of numerical Extension to the great Parallelogram, as to its self.

If therefore there is any Mutability of Matter, it must be comprehended under the Rules of this Proposition; for if it keeps its Situation, there is no Alteration in the Figure, and consequently in the Extension.

I lay this down as a standing Maxim, from the Consideration of what has been said, that, *There can be no Action of Matter without Mutability.*

For if Matter is quiescent, the same Space numerically divides the Substance as before, and the Figure receives no Alteration or Mutation; and from this it is a Contradiction, that any Action of Matter should be without Motion.

If Matter is moved from one Space into another, this can not produce any comparing of Idea's, because void Space can only measure the Body possessing that Space; and one Triangle taking up the Place where another was before, produces no Similitude or Dissimilitude, any more than the taking one Page of Letters, in a Printing Press, from one Part of the Form, and placing them in another, alters the Sense of the Words the Letters make up.

If our Adversaries fly back to avoid this, and insist, that the Idea's are only different Combinations of Matter produced from Motion; I shall consider this, only desiring the Reader to reconsider what I have before said concerning the Absurdity



## 42 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

city of the Ideas being material; which are only the Images of Things.

I shall now suppose, that the Action of Matter forms a Combination of Parts into so many Ideas, that there is a Similitude and Dissimilitude in the different Figures. I grant, as there is betwixt a square Table and an oval one; a round Ball and an hexagonal Superficies; but the comparing Ideas is a Contemplation upon the Similitude of the two Bodies: For I have before observed, Transposition of Place makes no Alteration without a different Combination of Parts; therefore this Act of Contemplation, if material, must be breaking and knocking Ideas to Pieces, like the Work in a Braiser's Shop, when the Master, perhaps, breaks three or four several old Pieces of Work, to make up a new Candlestick. This is so far from comparing the Ideas, it is really impairing; an Action intirely opposite thereto, and destroys Reflection and all the succeeding Operations of the Understanding; and makes the House of Wisdom really a Lumber Room.

Whereas we are sensible, from our own Knowledge and Experience, in our own Way of Thinking, that the Ideas, whether single or compound, remain in the Mind the same, and are carried back to it by Reflection, as oft as there is Occasion; so that they never appear broken and deformed, unless in our Sleep; and that proceeds from another Cause, that affects the Perception at that Time; but this Hypothesis would make the Mind of Man a continual Repository of broken Ideas and Dreams.

Our Adversaries cannot make this Action of comparing either filling up new Space by Motion, or breaking Ideas into Pieces, squaring or altering the imaginary Situation of their Figures and Parts; they have only one Refuge left, and that will not be long their own, to recur to.

That is, To make Matter the impressing Substance, that like the Letters of a Press, forms the Images of Things in the Mind.

This indeed heals some Absurdities, and makes more; it prevents the Contradictions let in upon the Laws of Extension and Motion, but at the same time it does not provide for a Substance to take this Impression; so that the Difficulties are only translated and not taken away, as will appear from what I have before said upon Figure B.

The same Arguments will serve as to all the Operations of the Mind not here mentioned; for if even the simple comparing Ideas cannot belong to Matter, neither can compounding, Judgement and Ratiocination proceed therefrom, which are more complex Actions of the Mind.

There

There  
particular  
I shall  
no Qua  
Basis Tak  
From  
tance to  
1st, N  
does from  
another,  
the first  
These  
tically tr  
There  
Place of  
it had n  
Conse  
Property  
into is  
led that  
not be i  
Thus  
ter is in  
the same  
There  
Matter.  
bined or  
sition of  
of Con  
that Pri  
Argument  
the Part  
Conse  
dation  
the Life  
Creation  
The  
that can  
ry great  
Subj. Q  
naturally  
little M  
by fallin  
Virtues



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 43

There is one fundamental Principle of the Soul requires a particular Discussion in this Place, viz. Consciousness.

I shall lay it down as a Maxim, *That void Space is capable of no Qualities except Extension and Divisibility.* The Area is a *Rasa Tabula*, and has no Virtues and Properties.

From hence several Corollaries flow, of the utmost Importance to the proceeding in the present Questions before us.

1<sup>st</sup>, No Body receives any Virtue from Space, though Space does from Bodies. 2<sup>dly</sup>, If a Body remove from one Space to another, it receives no more Virtue from the last Space than the first.

These seem, and are the plainest Corollaries, and mathematically true.

Therefore the Transferring the Triangle *i k*, Fig. A. to the Place of *g h*, creates no new Property, in the first Triangle, it had not before.

Consequently, Motion of Matter cannot induce any new Property Matter had not before, if the Space Matter moves into is a meer Vacuum, by the Cession of the Bodies that filled that Space before, as it must necessarily be, as Matter cannot be in several different Places at the same Time.

Thus we come to the utmost of our Argument, That Matter is indifferently the same, whatever Space it fills up with the same Dimensions.

Therefore Consciousness must be a distinct Principle from Matter. Because if we imagine Substance to be divided, combined or formed into any different Figures, by Motion or Position of the Parts, this can no more produce or be the Effect of Consciousness, than the Triangle *i k* can be endued with that Principle, by moving into the Place of *g h*; and the same Argument holds in the minutest and most intense Motion of the Parts of Matter.

Consciousness is the first Principle of the Mind, the Foundation of all the rest, though very unactive in its self, it being the Life of Worms, and the meanest Parts of the Animal Creation.

The next Principle is the Will: This is a Principle indeed that carries Power with it, like some Princes, who look very great in the Seat of Empire, yet are Slaves in the meanest Subjection to their own Vassals: And though this Principle is naturally invested with Power to make a glorious Figure in the little Microcosm of Man, it makes often a very indifferent one, by falling beneath its own Abilities. I desire to know what Virtues Space can have to endue the Bodies placed therein, with  
a Know-



## 44 . Of the STATE of the DEAD.

a Knowledge of their own Existence, and a Will to chuse, direct and govern the whole System; it slacken its Power when we sleep, and resume it when we wake.

The other succeeding Operations are moved by these Principles, not to form mechanical Conclusions, but noble Theorems and lasting Truths, and to bind Matter it self in Chains of Propositions, that it may not pretend to more Power than it really has.

To conclude, Mr. Locke, not able to avoid the Point-blank Force of these Arguments, placed himself at a greater Distance, and obliquely struck at the Immortality and Immateriality of the Soul, by squab Positions he has not been handsomely driven from since.

He asserted it to be no Contradiction, that Matter should think: Which once granted, it would consequently follow, that for ought we know to the contrary, we are only thinking Matter at the best; and therefore all our Assurances of a future State and our Dependance upon a Release by Death, from the Servitude of the Body, are weakened and rendered very precarious.

Yet this Hypothesis flows with Absurdities; for he says, God may superadd a Quality to Matter it had not before.

Yet this superadded Quality must act within the Sphere of Matter, or in the Vacuum interspersed through that Matter: If it acts within the Sphere of Matter, it must act within the Sphere of Extension; and be subject to the Motion or Quiescence of its Subjects; and Thought must fill up Space, and be measured by the same.

But thought, as I have proved before, is not capable of numerical Division and Extension.

But it cannot act in the Vacuum otherwise than in a material Manner: For if it be a Quality annexed to Matter, it must act within the Sphere of that Matter, by an evident Axiom. That nothing can act beyond it self; for where there is Power, the Subject of that Power must be; and therefore the Sphere of Activity must be capable of numerical Division and Extension.

It may perhaps be objected, that Attraction and Gravitation act in immense Spheres, through an Interposition of numerous Bodies, without filling up Space, or being confined by the Laws I have mentioned before.

I answer, That Attraction and Gravitation are only Terms arbitrarily assumed, that they are no superadded Qualities, and that other Words may be found out equally if not more expressive than they are; for all Bodies are capable of Motion and

measuring

measuring  
and Grav  
Motion,  
endures;  
when I  
whereas  
the partic  
over the  
menon.

But to  
the Addi  
independ  
Matter  
and divid  
ject it b  
is menta  
Body inf  
it down

fettered  
Matter;  
from th  
in this  
up ano  
I have  
upon th  
I have s  
struct.

the Imm  
The  
not con  
possible  
but wh  
of the  
inferred

measuring

measuring  
measuring  
measuring  
measuring



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 45

measuring Space. That Motion, and what we call Attraction and Gravitation, is no more than a particular Direction of Motion, impressed by the Decree of God, while the World endures; you may as well say, I add a new Quality to Matter when I strike a Ball at Billiards that was before quiescent; whereas all Matter is in its own Nature capable of Motion, the particular Direction thereof is in the Power of God. Moreover the Word *Attraction* is called in rather to solve a Phenomenon, they find by Experience and Calculation to be true, than really to express the Thing it self.

But to say, that a Quality can be added to Matter, without the Addition of a new Substance, and that this Quality can act independently of the other Qualities of Matter, is to say, That Matter can work independently of it self, without Extension and divisible Parts: for Quality is certainly relative to the Subject it belongs to, and if it belongs to any Part of Matter, it is mentally divisible *in infinitum*, as Motion is, if we suppose a Body infinitely divided in that State of Motion: So that I lay it down as a Maxim, All Qualities belonging to Matter are fettered by both Extension and Divisibility, inseparable from Matter; and I have proved before, That Thought cannot flow from that mathematical Disposition of Parts, unless we bring in this grand Contradiction, That one Part of Space can fill up another Part of Space at the same Time.

I have not Room, nor indeed Occasion to enlarge further upon this Subject here; if any Man is not satisfy'd with what I have said, the Field is open to engage in, to inform and instruct. I shall only make one Observation more, concerning the Immortality of the Soul.

The Immateriality and Independance of its Substance, do not consequently infer the Immortality thereof; they prove it possible for the Soul to exist after the Dissolution of the Body; but whether it actually does exist, depends upon the Pleasure of the great GOD, and is made known by Revelation, and inferred by Reason.

reformed Divines, to avoid the Terrors of Purgatory, have entirely taken away the intermediate

CHAP.  
[The contrary, except the Revelation concerning the Day of Judgement, unknown to the World before Christ's coming.]  
State;



## 46 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

### CHAP. III.

*What the future State of the Soul is after the Corporeal Dissolution; or concerning the middle State of Souls betwixt Death and the Resurrection, as to the Degrees of Happiness and Misery.*

**A**S we have already proved from natural Reason, and from the Evidence of sacred Writ, That human Souls survive the Body; we must next examine in what State they are, and what Life they enjoy after this corporeal Separation. We must first enquire if they are invested with another Body after they have parted from this; of what Nature that Body is; or, whether they remain naked and divested of all Matter to the Resurrection. The Solution of this Question leads us directly into a Knowledge of a future State. But as the other, concerning the Degrees of Happiness and Misery, is more general and less obscure, we shall bring upon the Test into Examination, the Opinion of some \* *Neotericks*, who will have the Souls immediately after Death carried up into Heaven, and to the highest Glories of the Beatifick Vision; or to be depressed into the utmost Miseries of Hell: Both, I think, are too much upon the Extreames. The reformed Divines, to avoid the Terroures of Purgatory, have entirely taken away the intermediate

---

\* With the Doctor's Pardon, it is no *Neoterick* Opinion, but very ancient; and nothing appears either in Reason or Scripture to the contrary, except the Revelation concerning the Day of Judgement, unknown to the World before Christianity.

State;

State;  
fall upo  
Roman  
the Peo  
should  
Search  
concern  
and Ha  
We sha  
ble, and  
it is to  
to asser  
to the  
sion, b  
CHRL  
They  
Beatific  
shew fo  
in Matt  
Reason,  
Hope,  
ly forw  
the Spo  
promise  
Scriptur  
whence  
Futurit  
we are  
of Chr  
God, a  
More  
the Sen

\* If th  
contradic  
tifick Vi



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 27

State; as we are too apt in avoiding one Folly to fall upon another. It is very well known, the *Roman* Purgatory is adapted to the Humours of the People and the Benefit of the Priest: But why should these Phantasies fright us away from the Search of Truth, and the Opinion of the Ancients, concerning the hitherto unfulfilled State of Misery and Happiness, before the Day of Judgement. We shall at present defer to speak of the Miserable, and confine our selves to shew, how dissonant it is to the sacred Writings and the ancient Faith, to assert the immediate Translation from this Life to the Kingdom of Heaven, and the Beatifick Vision, before the Resurrection and coming of CHRIST.

They who flatter themselves with the immediate Beatifick Vision of God, after this Death, let them shew some Evangelical Promise for this Belief. For in Matters of this Nature, independant of natural Reason; and flowing only from the Will of God; Hope, supported by no Divine Promise, is rashly forward. Bring therefore the sacred Writers, the Sponsors and Guardians of this so ripened and promised Hope, let them appeal to those Texts of Scripture, *Matth. v. 8.* and *1 Cor. xiii. 12.* from whence they will find very little Prospect of that Futurity immediately after Death\*: Nay, in which we are rather taught to expect the Appearance of Christ, and the Manifestation of the Sons of God, at the Resurrection.

Moreover, according to the sacred Oracles, and the Sentiments of the Apostles, the Saints expect

---

\* If the Texts in Scripture, promising Immortality, do not contradict the contrary Assertion, and if St. Paul saw the Beatifick Vision, the Doctor has no room to triumph.

only



## 48 Of the STATE of the DEAD

only their finishing Reward and Consummation of Glory at the Rising of the Dead. St. Peter promises a Crown to faithful Pastors, when the Prince of Shepherds shall appear, 1 Pet. v. 4. And we take it for granted, the Lairy will not be before-hand in that Respect. The holy Apostle St. Paul, inferior to none in his Christian Warfare, proposes not to receive his Crown till the Day of the Lord, 2 Tim. iv. 8. and that his Soul deposited with God, was rendered up to eternal Life: *I am persuaded, that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him, against that Day,* 2 Tim. i. 12. As though the intermediate time, from Death to that Day, was to be passed over in inglorious Silence: which that holy Man would never have done, if it had been filled up with the Beatifick Vision. Moreover, the Mercies he implores, the Joys he promises, and the Punishments he threatens, are all reserved to that Day, 2 Thes. i. 7, 8, 9. that might equally have been applied to the Day of Death, if it had been the Consummation of Misery and Happiness.

It is moreover observed, that he supposes the Soul to lie down, committed to the Keeping of God: So in the sacred Style, the Dead are said to sleep, and to be raised at the Resurrection, in both Testaments \* *where they will find very little Troop* I know this is not to be taken in too strict and gross a Sense, as tho' the Soul remained after Death void of Action and all Sort of conscious Existence whatsoever †; for Thought cannot be shaken from human Understanding: But still, as this Way

*the Sentiments of the Apostles*  
 \* I with the Doctor would have consulted whether the Book of Job belongs to the Jewish Covenant or not. † I have translated *vita & animis* *apers* in that manner to save a Blunder.

vluo

of speaking  
 sion, whi  
 phers and  
 the Soul:  
 the Soul's  
 1 Cor. xv  
 It is cer  
 both what  
 Thessalonian  
 Dead. H  
 rately to  
 though the  
 the Apost  
 Grief, for  
 Bodies, ei  
 ly this w  
 supposes  
 Refreshme  
 of a blesse  
 CHRIST  
 rant, bre  
 ye sorrow  
 ye believe  
 also which  
 Thess. iv  
 with these  
 Moreov  
 Corinthians  
 Hopes de  
 That oth  
 pense our  
 if the Bea  
 the Resur  
 the Rewa  
 Fruition o



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 49

of speaking is entirely foreign to the beatifick Vision, which, according to the Opinion of Philosophers and Divines, is the most perfect Operation of the Soul: I say, that Sleep, an imperfect State of the Soul's Existence, is no proper Allusion thereto; 1 Cor. xv. 6, 18, 20, 51. 1 Thess. iv. 13, 14.

It is certainly worth while, to examine and weigh both what St. Paul says to the *Corinthians* and to the *Thessalonians*, concerning the Hope and State of the Dead. He exhorts the *Thessalonians*, not immoderately to grieve for those who sleep in Jesus, as though they were without Hope. But why should the Apostle apply the Remedies for immoderate Grief, for those who immediately, freed from their Bodies, enter into a State of celestial Glory; surely this was Consolation enough: However, he supposes no such sudden Possession as a Comfort and Refreshment to them, but places all in the Hopes of a blessed Resurrection and the future Coming of CHRIST in Glory: But I would not have you ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep; that ye sorrow not even as others which have no hope: for if ye believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him, 1 Thess. iv. 13, 14. Wherefore comfort one another with these Words, ver. 18.

Moreover, St. Paul in his 15th Chapter to the *Corinthians*, argues in such a manner, that all our Hopes depend upon a Resurrection, 1 Cor. xv. 20. That otherwise a future State would never recompense our Miseries and our Labours here. Whereas if the Beatifick Vision was immediately our own, the Resurrection would be no additional Happiness, the Reward would be already paid down in the Fruition of that heavenly Light.



## 30 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

In the same manner the Apostle in the viii<sup>th</sup> to the *Romans*, in comparing the Sufferings and Evils of this Life, with the Glory to come, postpones the Beatifick Vision, and insists upon the Point of the Resurrection alone; from whence the Compensation begins: *For I reckon, that the Sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the Glory which shall be revealed in us, Rom. viii. 18.* But when is it to be revealed? Not at the Time of our Death, *but when we expect the Redemption of our Body; viz. at the Resurrection, v. 23.* Likewise in the Second Epistle to the *Corinthians*, he says; The Afflictions of this Life bring us an eternal Weight of exceeding Glory; *We know that being freed from this Tabernacle, not that we shall immediately pass over to the Beatifick Vision of God, that eternal Building of God in Heaven, that celestial Body we shall put on, 2 Cor. v. 1.* This is the whole Scope of the Christian Religion; nor, indeed, before that Resurrection, are any other Retributions promised except Peace, Rest and Refreshment to the Soul; *1 Thess. i. 7. Rev. xx. 26. Tit. ii. 12, 13. Col. iii. 3, 4. 1 Joh. ii. 3.* The other Passages relating to this, for Brevity's sake I omit; though I recommend them to the Reader's careful Examination: At the same time let us attend therefore to that Voice from Heaven, *Blessed are they who die in the Lord.* But this Blessedness does not consist in the immediate Fruition of God; no, it is no more, than that they may rest from their Labour, and that their Works do follow them, *Rev. xiv. 13.* This is their Reward, this is the Order of Things, as the highest Degree of Blessedness we are to expect, *1 Cor. v. 5. i. 17.* We assert therefore according to the Doctrine of Christianity, That the Happiness of the departed Saints is, at first,  
the

the Hop  
till that  
their St  
gels, an  
the sacre  
and of t  
hereto.  
Beatifick  
in this V  
the other  
dom of  
Or, that  
the consi  
tions of  
Fathers  
vations  
carried v  
dise, it c  
Place of  
himself;  
or Christ  
and imp  
in this A  
Paths, w  
Lord; b  
and Rest  
piness;  
they shal  
is the A  
shall be v  
Phil. i. 2  
the Apost

\* The J  
of Judgem  
6. vi. p. 1



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 51

the Hope of future Glory, Peace and inward Joy, till that agreeable Day comes, they are raised from their State of Death, to a Conformity with Angels, and to Christ himself. All that we read in the sacred Scriptures of the Dead restored to Life; and of the Seats of departed Souls, are agreeable hereto. Can we think God tore *Lazarus* from the Beatifick Vision, to give him a miserable Situation in this World? Or that *Abraham's Bosom*, where the other *Lazarus* was placed, was the very Kingdom of Heaven, filled with the Vision of God? Or, that the Souls crying under the Altar, were the consummated Faithful, in their compleat Stations of Glory? *Rev. vi. 9. Heb. xi. 39, 40.* The Fathers say no such Thing, in any of their Observations upon these Places. Lastly, When Christ carried with him the Soul of the Thief into Paradise, it could not be into the supream Heaven, the Place of Vision, for thither he had not ascended himself; nor do any of the ancient Authors, \* *Jews* or *Christians*, place *Paradise* there. If we freely and impartially follow the Light of the Scriptures in this Affair, and not fly off the least from these Paths, we may repeat it, *Blessed are the Dead in the Lord*; because they are held in Peace, Consolation and Rest, and are blessed Candidates for that Happiness; when having put on their glorious Bodies, they shall enjoy that ineffable Vision of God. Nor is the Apostle against us, when he says, that he shall be with Christ, and be present with the Lord; *Phil. i. 23. 2 Cor. v. 8.* For whatever Presence the Apostle means, whether visible and corporeal,

\* The *Jews* suppose the Felicity of Souls, before the Day of Judgement, not to be compleat. See *Petock Not. Misc. t. vi. p. 176.*



## 52 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

spiritual and internal, it does not affect what I have said: If he means the corporeal Presence, it must refer to the Resurrection; the intermediate time being omitted; for Souls separate from the Body and from Matter can have no corporeal Presence with Christ, it being impossible and against the Nature of Things it should be so. The Apostle therefore omits the State of Sleep, and connects Death and the Resurrection together, without any intervening Point of Time. Nor indeed am I averse to this Explication, because I find the Apostle in several Places mention this Coming of Christ as sudden and just at Hand; and in the first Verse of this Chapter, he joins the Time of putting off our terrestrial Bodies, and putting on our celestial ones together: *For we know that if our earthly House of this Tabernacle were dissolved, we have a Building of God, an House not made with Hands, eternal in the Heavens;* 2 Cor. v. 8. Here he makes one State instantaneously succeed the other, though more than a Millennium and a half has passed since the Death of St. Paul, and he has not yet his celestial Body; the intercepted Space of Time in which no Change has intervened, passes for nothing. And whereas in the Chapter to the *Corinthians*, he seems to desire not to be unclothed; and in that to the *Philippians*, he wishes to be dissolved, this must be so tempered as to heal the seeming Contradictions therein: For if this Phrase, *to be with the Lord*, is used by the Apostle here and every where, as our eternal dwelling with him, we must necessarily understand it as of the State of the Resurrection, *Eph. ii. 6. 1 Theff. iv. 17. Eph. iv. 10.* When Christ was ascended into Heaven, he did not promise his Disciples he would take them to himself before his Coming again, *Joh. xiv. 3.* Besides the very Nature of the

the T  
to the  
Body,  
without  
is given  
conveye  
Apostle  
nor can  
son and

But  
ges to n  
not opp  
their S  
ferent  
Good,  
they wi  
render  
Luke x  
tection  
made t  
upon h  
of Chri  
yii. 59  
was wi  
tion.  
by real  
from h  
World  
Solace  
sion of  
is in a  
pect;  
with, a

JOH  
LXX  
JOH  
JOH



the Thing points out, That as Christ ascended into the highest Heavens, cloathed with a glorious Body, the Saints cannot dwell and inhabit there, without their glorious Bodies likewise; which as it is given to none, unless to those extraordinarily conveyed thither, as *Enoch*, we must suppose the Apostle speaks of a corporeal and local Presence, nor can any other Meaning be consistent with Reason and the Divine Disposition of Things \*.

But if you would rather understand these Passages to mean the spiritual Presence of Christ, I shall not oppose the same. The Saints in this Life have their Share, and in the next will have it after a different Manner; in all which, the Souls of the Good, after Death, are said to be with Christ, as they will be in his keeping. Christ, at his Death, rendered his Soul into the Hands of his Father, *Luke xxiii. 46.* That is, into his Custody and Protection; and by Death overcame Death, and was made the Lord of Life and Death: And *Stephen*, upon his Departure, gave his Soul into the Hands of Christ, saying, *Lord Jesus receive my Spirit, Acts vii. 59.* In the same manner the Soul of *St. Paul* was with Christ, in his Keeping till the Resurrection. Moreover, such are said to be with Christ, by reason of the Comfort and Joy they receive from him after Death; for Christ came into the World and overcame Death, for the Comfort and Solace of those who die in him; This is, the Infusion of divine Virtue, that warms into Hope, and is in a manner an Intuition into the State we expect; and therefore Christ is there said to live with, and comfort us.

The Doctor speaks a little *gratis* in this Place.



#### 54 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

From hence the seeming Opposition of these Texts, to be with Christ, and to be in this World, are explained; for upon our Departure hence, we are not extinguished and annihilated, we are in the Presence of God and Christ, who will restore us again upon the Theatre of this World into perfect Life, *Luke xx. 38. Col. iii. 3, 4.*

It is therefore no Wonder St. Paul should say, *Death is my Gain*; for after the Troubles and Fatigues of Life, his Dangers and his Labours, Thirst and Hunger, Cold and Nakedness, Stripes and Wounds, Prisons, Stonings, Shipwrecks, and all the Plagues of Earth and Sea, the Sleep of Death must be comfortable to him, if it was only a Truce with Misery for a while. Let us therefore, miserable Creatures, think more modestly of our Rewards, and not expect, upon the closing of our Eyes, the Beatifick Vision; when even the Apostle of the *Gentiles*, who had deserved so much of the Christian Religion, promised to himself inferiour Rewards. May less please us, and think it a Happiness we have immortal conscious Souls, full and acquiescing in the divine Love, and Hope of participating in the glorious Coming of Christ.

Let me add, That if Souls are immediately admitted to the Beatifick Vision and perfect State of Glory, the Doctrine of the Resurrection is rendred useless and unnecessary: For if they have already this supream Felicity, to what Purpose are they clothed with Body afterwards? You will say, perhaps, that it may participate of Rewards and Punishments, as it has been Partner with the Soul in good and evil Actions: What Stuff is this, when the Mind only is conscious, and the Body is not capable of Good or Evil, Pleasure or Pain, by any

Union

of  
Union o  
made.  
crown an  
it the A  
standing  
over, as  
tinual Fl  
human B  
as a Part  
Shall it  
Parts;  
rejoiced  
indeed,  
the othe  
State o  
whole L  
of Christ  
in Charit  
Eighty  
into eve  
serve as  
the Hus  
surrecti  
Power of  
the Sak  
gives to  
pose;  
ved the  
God, i  
after, l

\* Beg  
conclusiv  
ments by  
and Pun  
† The



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 55

Union or Conjunction \* you can suppose to be made. Why therefore should you pretend to crown an insensible Creature with Glory, and make it the Author of Good and Evil, without Understanding to apprehend, or Will to perform? Moreover, as in the Space of seven Years, by the continual Flow of Particles, a perfect new System of a human Body is framed, what Parts shall be allotted as a Partner to the Soul in Happiness and Rewards? Shall it have the raw juvenile, or the mature old Parts; the Case new cast off, or that in which it rejoiced in the Vigour of Youth and Pleasure; or, indeed, what Pretence is there for one more than the other? They are equal Candidates for that State of Felicity. If a Man has dedicated his whole Life to Purity and to Sufferings for the Cause of Christ, and after the Consumption of his Goods in Charity, crowns his Merits with Martyrdom at Eighty Years of Age, which Body shall be taken into everlasting Glory? Will not the same Answer serve as Christ made, when it was asked, which of the Husbands the Woman was to have at the Resurrection, *Ye err, not knowing the Scriptures or the Power of God.* The Resurrection is made, not for the Sake of the Body, but of the Soul; and God gives to every Soul a proper Body † for that Purpose; the first is putrified in the Earth and dissolved there, and it is to receive a Tabernacle from God, 1 Cor. xv. 37. 2 Cor. v. 1. But of this hereafter, let us return.

---

\* Begging the Doctor's Pardon, this Argument is not very conclusive: It is certain, the Soul is affected in all its Enjoyments by the Body, and therefore Adequateness of Rewards and Punishments may require that corporeal Union.

† The Doctor denies the numerical Resurrection.



56 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

We say, the Resurrection is enervated by this sudden Arrival at the supream Bliss before; as St. *Augustin* says, *To what Purpose do Spirits receive their Bodies at the Resurrection, if they can have their perfect Happiness without them?* And we shall prove, that all the ancient Hereticks who denied the Resurrection of the Body, were strenuous Patrons of this premature Glorification; and we shall find this prudently and politicly enough introduced into the Church of *Rome*, to countenance the Invocation of Saints, and other Fooleries and Opinions calculated for Gain. (*de Beat. Sanctor.*) *Bellarmino* observes, this Doctrine is the Foundation of all relating to the Worship, Canonization, Images, and Reliques of Saints; not to omit their Pilgrimages and Vows, such a weighty Concatenation of Gold and Silver does this Doctrine draw in its Train; if you add Purgatory, or the State of these Souls who stop in the Way to Heaven, or are pushed forwards by the Prayers of the Living and the Suffrages of the Saints, they make a Mine richer than the *Indies* to the Proprietors: But Wo to them who corrupt or make Sale of the Word of God, 2 *Cor.* ii. 17.

I will not carry my Censures so severely against all, who, without Prospect of Gain, comfort departing People; and animate them with the immediate Prospect of Heaven; and what is piously moved to abate the Terrours of Death, must be interpreted with Mildness, not insisted upon as an Article of Faith. When the Souls of good Men are departed hence, they are placed in Safety, above the Stroke of Punishment, and being exposed to the wild Mazes of Errour; and if they are not in the direct Possession of Heaven, they have an indelible Title thereto; and

and by  
enjoy  
at our  
hemenc  
piness.  
the Co  
hand;  
and an  
pinion,  
Terror  
Course  
us not  
ven by  
reditan  
the D  
State:  
its Ev  
very I  
any g  
is with  
Work,  
thy St  
Th  
from  
sies o  
enquir  
pinion  
except  
of th  
ly fou  
Power  
ro en  
Beatif  
Souls  
Riv  
Foun



and by way of Anticipation, may be said to enjoy the same: We are all in Haste to come at our Inheritance, and are transported with Vehemence towards that desirable Glory and Happiness. Many of the primitive Christians believed the Coming of Christ to be in their Times, at hand; as is plain from the Apostolick Epistles and ancient Fathers; and warmed with this Opinion, they more chearfully went through the Terrours of Death and Persecutions. But as the Course of Time has shaken off that Errour, let us not fall into another, and rather take Heaven by Violence than stay for a lawful and hereditary Possession of the same, leaping over all the Degrees of Promotion and Honour in that State: As *Irenaeus* says, The World is now at its Evening Station, Christ is at Hand, at the very Doors, *lib. 5. c. 31.* Neither do we want any greater Comfort, *Lo I come and my Reward is with me, to render to every one according to his Work, Amen, come Lord Jesu. O Grave where is thy Sting, O Death where is thy Victory!*

Thus far concerning the State of the Dead from the sacred Writings. But as in Controversies of this Nature, it is of some Weight to enquire into the ancient and purely primitive Opinions; though we ascribe Infallibility to none, except the Apostles, of any Age; and the Truth of the Christian Religion may be more sincerely found before its Improvement into Craft and Power; it will not be unworthy of some Pains to enquire what the Ancients thought of this Beatification of the Saints, and of the State of Souls before the Resurrection.

Rivulets are more pure the nearer they are to the Fountain Head; and in Proportion the nearer to the Apostles



## 58 Of the STATE of the DEAD:

Apostles and the Apostolick Times, the more approved and undoubted those Evidences are. Though we have the Greek Fathers universally on our Side, I shall think it sufficient for this Chapter to examine the three first Ages of the Church, in which we shall find no Greeks or Latins, except Hereticks, and one single \* Cyprian, who transferred the Souls of Men, immediately after Death, to the Vision of God; in the same manner it has since been held by the Church of Rome.

That it was the Opinion of many Hereticks in the first Ages of the Church, who at the same time denied the Resurrection, we may find from Justin Martyr, Irenæus, Tertullian and the rest †.

They who say there is no Resurrection of the Dead, but that as soon as they die their Souls are received into Heaven; do not look upon them as Christians.

We see the two Errours are connected by Justin, the same Hereticks who denied the Resurrection of the Body, exalted the Souls immediately from Death into Heaven.

Irenæus gives Light to this Place of St. Justin, who charges the Hereticks of that Age with those two Errours, lib. 5. c. 31.

Because those who indeed seem to be true Believers, pass over at once all the Orders of the Promotion of good Men, and are ignorant of the Method of passing from a State of Contemplation to Incorruption, have in this Case an heretical Notion of Things; the

\* The Doctor was no Friend to St. Cyprian.

† οἱ δὲ λέγουσι μὴ εἶναι νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν, ἀλλὰ ὅμα τῷ ἀποθνήσκειν τὰς ψυχὰς αὐτῶν ἀναλαμβάνεσθαι εἰς τὸ θεῖον, μὴ ὑπολάβητε αὐτοὺς χρεῖστας. Jus. Dial. cum Tryphon. p. 307.

Here-

Hereti  
jecting  
Promise  
they mo  
go to  
formed  
univers  
previous  
ly ignor  
our Lo  
rifen d  
had le  
Quo  
recte c  
tionis  
ruptel  
bentes  
& no  
nentes  
mortu  
miurg  
affingi  
surrec  
onis s  
essent  
dicun  
onem  
abiiss  
W  
Irene  
reeki  
in th  
The



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 59

Hereticks despising the Work of God's Hands, and rejecting the Salvation of the Body; and scorning the Promises of God, say, That immediately after Death they mount over the Heavens and the Demiurgus, and go to the Mother, or imaginary Father they have formed to themselves; it is no Wonder they deny the universal Resurrection, who are ignorant even of the previous Means to the Resurrection: They are wilfully ignorant, I say; for if these Things had been so, our Lord, in whom they pretend to believe, had not risen the Third Day, but expiring upon the Cross, had left his Body behind on the Earth.

Quoniam autem quidam ex his qui putantur recte credidisse, supergrediuntur ordinem promotionis justorum, & modos meditationis ad incorruptelam ignorant, Hæreticos sensus in se habentes: Hæretici despicientes plasmationem Dei, & non suscipientes salutem carnis suæ, contemnentes autem & repromissionem Dei, simul atq; mortui fuerint, dicunt se supergredi Cælos & Demiurgum, & ire ad matrem, vel ad eum qui ab ipsis affingitur patrem: qui ergo universam reprobant resurrectionem, quid mirum si nec ordinem resurrectionis sciant? nolentes intelligere, quoniam si hæc ita essent ut dicunt, ipse utique Dominus, in quem se dicunt credere, non in tertiâ die fecisset resurrectionem, sed super crucem expirans, confestim utique abiisset sursum, relinquens corpus terræ.

We have the united Testimonies of *Justin* and *Irenæus*, they do not drive up at once the Souls \* reeking from the Body, to the Seats of Glory in the highest Heavens: As *Justin* moreover says, *The Souls of the Pious are in a better Place; but*

---

\* This Expression must be taken in a metaphorical Sense.



## 60 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

the wicked and unjust in a worse, expecting the Day of Judgement \*.

Ireneus at the Close of the above-mentioned Chapter says the same †; If therefore our Lord preserved the Laws of the Dead, in being the First-born of the Dead, and remained to the Third Day in the Bowels of the Earth, and afterwards rising in the Flesh, shewed the Print of his Nails to his Disciples, and so ascended to the Father; how must they be confounded who say, that this World is the infernal one, and about our selves; and that the inner Man leaving his Body, ascends to the supercelestial Place? When our Lord went into the Midst of the Shadow of Death, where the Souls of the Dead were, and his Body arose therefrom, and after his Resurrection was taken up: It is plain therefore, that the Souls of his Disciples, for whose Sake our Lord did these Things, will go into an invisible Place appointed for them by God, and there will stay till the Resurrec-

\* Ταὶ μὲν τῶν ἡγουμένων Λυχαῖς ἐν χρεῖστοι τοῖς χαίροντες. τὰς δὲ ἀδίκους καὶ ἀνομίαν ἐν χαίροντες τοῖς τῶν χρεῖστον ἀποδομῶν: ἡρώων πότε.

† Si ergo Dominus legem mortuorum servavit, ut fieret primogenitus à mortuis, & commoratus usq; ad tertiam diem in inferioribus terræ, post deinde surgens in carne, ut etiam fixuras clavorum ostenderet discipulis suis, sic ascendit ad Patrem; quomodo non confundentur, qui dicunt inferos quidem esse hunc mundum, qui sit secundum nos; interiorē autem hominem ipsum derelinquentem hic corpus, in supercelestem ascendere locum? Cū enim Dominus in medio umbræ mortis abierit, ubi animæ mortuorum erant, post deinde corporaliter resurrexit, & post resurrectionem assumptus est: Manifestum est, quia & discipulorum ejus, propter quos hæc operatus est Dominus, animæ abibunt in invisibilem locum definitum eis a Deo, & ibi usque ad resurrectionem commorabuntur, sustinentes resurrectionem: post recipientes corpora & perfectè resurgentes, hoc est, corporaliter, quemadmodum & Dominus resurrexit, sic venient ad conspectum Dei.

tion;

tion; after  
selves, a  
pear in

This  
Example  
both Qu  
In his B  
because h  
to the S  
the Ma  
not into  
to the lo  
triarchs  
a Place  
ther, w  
worthy  
Lord, a  
ro exp  
ham's

\* The  
mon upo  
Purpose  
pinion be  
den, 161  
the Doct  
† Quo  
Scriptura  
formā hu  
in sublit  
ut illic  
regionem  
qui satis  
servi sup  
si forte  
capere,



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 61

tion; afterwards perfected, and corporeally rising themselves, as our Lord himself rose, so will they appear in the Presence of GOD \*.

This Explanation of Irenaus, taken from the Example of Christ, is followed by Tertullian, and both Quotations confirm and illustrate each other. In his Book *de Animâ*, c. 55 †. But if Christ God, because he was Man, died and was buried according to the Scriptures, satisfied the Law by submitting to the Manner of human Death below, and ascended not into the highest Heavens before he went down into the lowermost Parts of the Earth, to visit the Patriarchs and Prophets. Surely you may believe in such a Place as this lower Region, and drive them thither, who proudly think the Souls of the Faithful unworthy thereof; make Servants scorn to be above their Lord, and Disciples to be above their Master, and to expect the Comfort of the Resurrection in Abraham's Bosom.

\* The like says Andrew, Archbishop of Crete, in his Sermon upon *human Life and Death*. He was then to very little Purpose brought upon the Stage here. (Though in my Opinion he was of the Sixth Century.) It was printed at Leyden, 1619. in Quarto, B. B. Ox. This seems to contradict the Doctor, and to confirm the numerical Resurrection.

† Quod si Christus Deus, quia & Homo, mortuus secundum Scripturas, & sepultus secus easdem, huic quoque legi satisfecit, formâ humanæ mortis apud inferos functus; nec antea ascendit in sublimiora Cælorum, quam descendit in inferiora terrarum, ut illis Patriarchas & Prophetas compotes sui faceret; habes & regionem inferum subterraneam credere, & illos cubito pellere, qui satis superbè non putant animas fidelium inferis dignas; servi super Dominum, & discipuli super magistrum, adspersati si forte in Abraham sinu expectandæ resurrectionis solatium capere.

Again



## 62 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Again he says \*, *Heaven is allotted to none while this Earth is preserved whole, and I may say, sealed up, and with that the Kingdom of Heaven is sealed up likewise.*

And at the End of the same Chapter he says †, that in his Book of *Paradise* (a Book unfortunately lost) he has there proved the Soul to be sequestred below till the Day of the Lord. He asserts the same in many other Places of this Treatise of the Soul; and in his Apology, \*\* By *Paradise* we mean a Place of divine Pleasure, prepared for the Reception of the Just, though it is not the Heaven itself. In his 10th Book against *Marcion* §, I call that Region the Bosom of Abraham; for though it is not Heaven, it is above the lowermost Parts, a Refreshment to the Souls of the Just, till the Consummation of all Things; swallows up the Resurrection in the Completion of Reward.

You may see more of this in his Book de *Resurrectione Carnis*, c. 23. But of Tertullian we have said enough, because his Opinion in these Matters is plain and evident. Origen was entirely of the same Sentiments with these Fathers, That the Souls of the Saints, either of the old or new Dispensation, enjoyed an inferiour Degree of Felicity till the Resurrection. You have this

\* Nulli patet cœlum, terrâ adhuc salvâ, ne dixerim clausâ cum transactione enim mundi reserabuntur regna Cœlorum.

† Se constituisse omnem animam apud inferos sequestrari, in diem Domini.

\*\* Et si Paradisum nominemus, locum divinæ amœnitatis, recipiendis sanctorum spiritibus, non Cœlum intelligimus.

§ Eam itaque regionem finem dico Abraham, etsi non Cœlestem, sublimiorem tamen inferis; interim refrigerium præbituram animabus iustorum, donec consummatio rerum resurrectionem omnium plenitudine mercedis expungat.

Opinion

Opinio  
The Ap  
but still

He b

St. Paul

adds;

cob exp

pect, w

At t

mus Ma

of the

Sevent

think t

ment a

Keeping

shall ex

of Imm

Victo

under

Altar,

there t

Distrib

that T

\* No

dem; fed

† Vido

sunt con

phetæ ex

‡ Ne

judicari

donec te

examen

mortalit

§ Seco

perpetua

spectate

donum



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 67

Opinion in his Seventh Homily upon *Leviticus* 4, The Apostles have not yet had their Fulness of Joy, but still expect it, as I do to be a Partaker thereof.

He brings likewise the Master of the Gentiles, St. Paul, as a Witness to the same, *Heb. xi.* and adds: † You see that Abraham, and Isaac and Jacob expect their Perfection, and all the Prophets expect, with us, a Completion of Blessedness.

At the End of the Third Century, *Victorinus Martyr* and *Lactantius* lived, both on our Side of the Question. *Lactantius's* Words are in the Seventh Book of his Institutions 4, We must not think that Souls are immediately brought to Judgement after Death; they are under one and the same Keeping till the Time comes, when the Great Judge shall examine their Actions, and give the Reward of Immortality to those whose Justness is approved.

*Victorinus* on *Rev. vi. 9.* Concerning the Souls under the Altar, he says; It was the outward Altar, not the inward one, which was Heaven; there the Souls expect the Time to come of the Distribution of Rewards and Punishments. At that Time, says he §, the Reward of the Saints will

\* Nondum enim receperunt lætitiā suā; ne Apostoli quidem; sed & ipsi expectant, ut & ego lætitiæ eorum particeps siam.

† Vides igitur quia expectat adhuc Abraham, ut quæ perfecta sunt consequantur: expectat & Isaac & Jacob, & omnes Prophetæ expectant nos, ut nobiscum perfectam beatitudinem capiant.

‡ Nec tamen quisquam putet animas post mortem protinus judicari: omnes enim in una communique custodia detinentur, donec tempus adveniat, quo maximus Judex meritorum faciat examen: tum quorum fuerit probata justitia, ii præmium immortalitatis accipient.

§ Sed quia in novissimo tempore sanctorum remuneratio perpetua, & impiorum ventura damnatio, dictum est illis, expectate; & pro corporis sui solatio acceperunt stolas albas, id est, donum spiritûs sancti.



## 64 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

be eternal, when the Damnation of the wicked is at Hand. It is said to them, expect; and for the Refreshment of the Body, they have white Garments, i. e. The Gifts of the Holy Ghost.

Moreover, most of the Fathers would have all humane Souls descend into *Hades*; from whence it is plain, in their Opinion, they were not directly elevated to the highest Glory: For though *Hades* may be taken in a large Signification, as the Mansions of both the Just and Unjust, yet none ever pretended, that there was the Beatifick Vision; and as the ancient Fathers placed the Souls of Men universally there, They consequently excluded them, during that Time, from the Vision of Glory. We may conclude from *Justin*, *Irenæus* and *Tertullian*, as Christ descended into *Hades*, other Souls must go to that Place, *If the Disciple is not above the Master*. From this Argument inverted, \* *Macarius*, the Philosopher, Bishop of *Jerusalem*, in the Council of *Nice*, explaining upon the Incarnation of Christ, says, he descended into *Hades*, that he might be like us in all Things.

From whence, he says, he formed our Resurrection from Death, i. e. from *Hades*; and adds afterwards in the same Chapter, αὐτὴ ἡ τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἀποδοκίμη καὶ ἀμώμητος πίστις. This is the Apostolick and unblameable Faith of the Church †. To this agrees *Eustatius*, Patriarch of *Antioch*, in *Theodore* upon that Psalm, § Thou wilt not leave my Soul in *Hades*. He supposes, *Hades* the Region

\* *Gelas. cyzic. de Conc. Nic. l. 1. c. 23.*

† Καταβύμβη μετὰ τὸν θάνατον εἰς τὸν Ἀδην, ἀνίστηται καὶ τῆς κατὰ τὸν ἕκτον αἰῶνα.

§ In *Dial. 1. pl. 16.*



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 63

of Humane Souls, and proves the Soul of Christ was purely humane, and submitted in this Life, and after that, to humane Chance; but Jesus went through all, for he went to the Region of humane Souls; and being discarnated, he was a living rational Soul, like to a humane One.

Likewise in an old Fragment *περί τῆς αἰωνίου τοῦ αἵματος*. Concerning the Cause of all Things, whether it is Caius, or some very ancient Christian, he says, \*The Souls of both the Just and Unjust, are retained in Hades.

Thus much concerning Demons; we must next speak of Hades, where the Souls of the Just and Unjust dwell.

He describes the Apartments therein, The Just are in this Hades, but not in the same Place with the Unjust; for though there is one Way thereto, there are Divisions in the Place itself.

He places Angels there, as Guardians of the Place, to separate the Souls, and assign them their proper Stations, and there, he says, they stay to the Resurrection.

Thus far concerning Hades, in which all Souls have

† Ἀλλὰ ὡς ἡ τῆς ἰσθμῆος ἐκαστος πῦρ ἔχει, καὶ ὡς τὰ χεῖρα καὶ ψυχὰς, καὶ τὰς ἀρετὰς ἐκαστος κατέχει, καὶ ὡς ὑψίστης λογικῆς ἀρετῆς καὶ τὰς ψυχὰς τῶν ἀνθρώπων διακρίνει.

\* In Not. Hoeschel. ad Photium.

† Καὶ ἔτι ὡς ἡ μετὰ δαίμονας ἀρετὴ καὶ ὡς ἡ ἀρετὴ, καὶ ὡς συνέχονται ψυχὰς δικαίων καὶ ἀδίκων, ἀναγκαῖον εἶναι.

\* Οἱ δίκαιοι ἐν τῇ αἰῶνι νῦν ὡς συνέχονται, ἀλλ' ἔτι ἀπὸ τῆς τῶν ὁρίων καὶ ἀδίκων, μὴ δὲ εἰς τὸ τοιοῦτον καὶ τῶν πᾶν.



# 66 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

their Habitations, till God makes the general Separation at the Resurrection †.

These Authors, all within the Limits of the three first Ages, are Witnesses of this primitive Doctrine of the Souls being in Hades; let me add the two Bishops of Casarea, of an uncertain, and of a lower Age than the rest, I mean, Andrew, and Aretas who corrected from the Commentaries of Andrew. In what we find of theirs upon the Revelations, they thus write, Death is the Separation of the Soul from the Body. Hades is a Place unseen to us, where our departed Souls are received \*.

Moreover, the same Bishops, upon the Sixth of the Revelations, concerning the Souls crying from under the Altar, confirm the same, as they equally overthrow the Romish Doctrine of the Beatifick Vision: † For these Reasons, the Saints are to wish for the general Consummation, for they

† Οὗτο· ὁ περὶ αὐτοῦ λόγος, ἐν ᾧ ψυχὰς πάντων κατήχεται, ὅχι καὶ ὅτι ὁ θεὸς ὅριον ἀνάστασιν τότε πάντων ποιήσει.

\* Θάνατος μὲν χωρισμὸς ψυχῆς καὶ σώματος, ὅθεν ἡ πόσις ἡμῶν αἰδέσθαι ἔχει ἀφανὲς καὶ ἀγνώστου, ὃ τὴν ψυχὴν ἡμῶν ἐκπύδων ἀναμύσσει διχόμας.

† Διὰ τούτων τὴν τῶν κόσμων συντέλειαν ἀντιμύνοι φαίνονται οἱ ἅγιοι διὰ μακροθυμίας ἔχει τῆς ἐκείνου ἀδελφῆς τελειώσεως καλίνουσαι, ἵνα μὴ χωρὶς αὐτῆς τελειωθῶσι, καὶ τὸ θεῖον Ἀπόστολον. Αἱ δὲ λευκαὶ σὺλαι τὴν ἰσχυρίαν αὐτοῖς ἐκείνου ἐκπύδων λαμβανέτωσαν ἢ ἡμῶν σῶμα, καὶ ἡ μὲν τοῦ σώματος ἐκπύδων ἐκπύδων τῶν ἡμῶν ἐκπύδων, αὐτοῖς ἐκπύδων ἐκπύδων, πᾶσι ἀπὸ λαμπρότητος παρρησίας, ἐκπύδων ἐκπύδων τοῖς κόλποις ὁ θεὸς ἀναπαύσινους. Πολλοὶς γὰρ ἐκείνου αἰδέσθαι. χωρὶς αἰδέσθαι ἐκπύδων ἐκπύδων ἐκπύδων, ὃ ὡν καὶ περὶ τῆς μελλούσης αὐτῆς αἰδέσθαι τεκμαίρεται.

arg

are to e  
thren, i  
posle, re  
white Ro  
tues, wi  
not recei  
the Proff  
tual Eyes  
rejoice in  
for it is  
tuons M  
such a  
he may  
him.

Thus  
the And  
it to be  
ted this

Lastly  
is to be  
deration  
Romanus  
Place of  
that the  
fect Joys  
carp, To  
tois ὁφεί  
to a holy  
concern  
Life, and

\* Not t  
the δέξας  
Matt. xvii  
he might



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 67

are to expect, and stay till the Death of their Brethren, that they may not, according to the Holy Apostle, receive their Consummation before them. Their white Robes shew the illustrious Splendour of their Virtues, with which being invested, though they have not received the Promise, yet they contemplate upon the Prospect of those good Things, with their spiritual Eyes, freed from the Servitude of Matter. They rejoice in their peaceful Repose in Abraham's Bosom; for it is the Opinion of Holy Men, that every virtuous Man has a Place allotted to him; qualified in such a Manner to his Merits and Condition, that he may form a Conjecture of the Glory prepared for him.

Thus far we have extracted the Opinion of the Ancients concerning Hades, who have made it to be a common Receptacle for Souls departed this Life to their Resurrection.

Lastly, To corroborate what has been said, it is to be observed with what Modesty and Moderation the blessed Martyrs, Polycarp, Clemens Romanus, and Ignatius, speak of the Situation and Place of departed Souls. They do not pretend that they are immediately received to the perfect Joys of the Beatifick Vision; but says Polycarp, To a Place allotted for them, \* εἰς τόπον αὐτοῖς ὁρισμένον, in Ep. ad Philip εἰς τὸν ἅγιον τόπον, to a holy (or separate) place, as Clemens Romanus, concerning St. Paul, εἰς τὸν ἅγιον τόπον ἰπορεύθη, he departed this Life, and went to the holy (or separate) Place. He

\* Not to Heaven and to Glory, but to τὸν ὁρισμένον τόπον, says Clement, Ep. c. 5. Clerk cites it likewise upon Matt. xvii. 18. it is likewise, εἰς τὸν ἴδιον τόπον. That he might go to his own Place, Acts i. 25.



## 68 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

calls it afterwards *χωραν ιουσιων*. But we must not pass over that remarkable Passage, in which, he says, All that, from *Adam* to this Day, have departed this Life in perfect Charity, rest in the Region of the Just as in their Bed, to be brought forth, and manifested at the Coming of Christ, and the Resurrection of the Dead. *Αι γενειαι πασαι απο Αδαμ έως της ημερας παρελθον, αλλ' οι εν αγαπη τελειωθεντες, κατα την τε χριστιανικην ιχυσιν χωραν ιουσιων. οι φανερωθησονται εν τη επισκοπη της Βασιλειας τε χριστιανικη γιγνασκει γαρ, εισελθεις εις τα ταμεια μικρον οσον, έως οτι παριδω η οργη κ' θυμος μου, κ' μνησθησομαι ημερας αγαθης, κ' αναστησω υμας εκ τρις σηνων υμων.* All the Generations from *Adam* to this Day are gone there, and those who have finished their Course in Charity, by the Grace of Christ, have the Place of the Righteous allotted to them, and shall appear in his Kingdom; For it is written, Come my People enter thou into thy Chambers. Hide thy self as it were for a little Moment, until the Indignation be overpast, \* *Isaiah* xxvi. 20.

All this is entirely agreeable to our Sentiments, and that which *Clemens* calls *χωραν ιουσιων*, with *Justin*, is *χωραν κρειττονα*, and with others *χωρας αξιους*, or *τοπος αξιους* and that which *Polycarp* calls *τοπον αυτοις οφειλόμενον*, *Ignatius* calls *τοπον ιδιον*, and the *τοπος αγιος* of *St. Clement*, is termed by *St. Chrysostome* *ισραηλ περιουσια*.

\* The Doctor would not crack this Nut, because the Kernel was not good; for only the Lines above-mentioned are the Quotation from *Isaiah*, and the rest are taken from we know not where; Even all that relates to the Doctor's Purpose. This is paining Scripture where there is no Scrip-  
ture.

There

There  
and the  
in this  
of the

οικλησιν

Luc. xv

Quiet, I

and easy

and the

declaring

mediate

nity as i

Notions

Scriptur

Christ, I

ciples, I

2, 3. an

will come

where I

We s

posed till

according

will dwe

xvii. 24.

Neithe

son, to e

the high

tial Judg

not one

End of

Day in w

ousness, b

xvii. 31.

fest, i C

the Things

white Thro



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 69

There is no great Difference in these Terms, and they answer to the Sense of the Scriptures in this Case; and Christ speaking of the State of the Pious in *Abraham's Bosom*, terms it *παράδεισος* Comfort, and not the supream Glory, *Luc. xvi. 25.* This is called in other Places, Quiet, Relaxation, and something like a sweet and easy Dream. Compare the sacred Scriptures and the apostolick Style, with the *Romish* one, declaring that the Souls of the Saints are immediately taken up into Heaven, and see the Trinity as it is: Good God, from whence are these Notions taken? From what Books of the sacred Scripture or Monuments of the ancient Church? Christ, before his Departure, said unto his Disciples, *I go to prepare a Place for you, John xiv. 2, 3. and if I go and prepare a Place for you, I will come again and receive you unto my self, that where I am ye may be likewise.*

We see here, this glorious Place is not proposed till Christ comes to give Possession; then, according to his Prayer to his Father, the Saints will dwell with Christ, and see his Glory, *Joh. xviii. 24.*

Neither is it agreeable to Scripture and Reason, to exact the highest Punishments, or bestow the highest Rewards, before a cool and impartial Judgement; but in the Scriptures we have not one Word of any Judgement, before the End of the World; *Because he hath appointed a Day in which he will judge the World with Righteousness, by that Man whom he hath ordained, Acts xvii. 31. Every Man's Work shall be made manifest, 1 Cor. iii. 13. That every one may receive the Things done in his Body. And I saw a great white Throne, and the Books were opened, and the*



dead Men were judged out of those Things which were written in the Books according to their Works, Rev. xx. 11, 12. Then the Just are separated from the Unjust, the Sheep from the Goats; the first on the right Hand, and the latter on his left, and Sentence shall be passed upon them. When the Son of Man shall come in his Glory, and all the Holy Angels with him. Then shall he sit upon the Throne of his Glory, and before him shall be gathered all Nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a Shepherd divideth his Sheep from the Goats, and he shall set the Sheep on his right Hand, but the Goats on the Left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right Hand, Come ye blessed of my Father inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the Foundation of the World. Then shall he say also to them on the left Hand, Depart from me ye cursed into everlasting Fire prepared for the Devil and his Angels. Mat. xxv. 31, 32. We see here the Method of this Judicature, and the Rewards and Punishments thereof, and the Sentence put in Execution; and these are told to happen, when the Son of Man shall come.

You may, perhaps, say, all this relates to the great and general Judgement of all: But, that there is moreover, a particular private Inquisition, that takes hold upon the Soul immediately after Death. I desire only to see those Places of Scripture, to prove any such private Judgement to be. The Texts we have cited are as clear as the Light only for a publick Judgement; and in all Disputes of this Nature, depending only upon the Will of God and divine Revelation, we must not make a new Disposition of Things to serve a private Hypothesis. The Soul upon the Departure from the Body, does undergo a private Self-Examination,

on, pro  
Life; i  
Sentenc  
and Dis  
angry:  
of its ap  
Transac  
Soul up  
change

\* W  
of Rome  
renders  
and ma  
fluious.  
ing to h  
the U  
and th  
Torme  
Judgem  
Do the  
mer Ju  
milder  
a more  
ment to  
Legality  
This m  
justice:

\* Nor  
after De  
Safety, t  
Actions;  
also cited  
Souls en  
when he  
Tom. 2.



on, proceeding from the Consciousness of its past Life; is Witness, for and against its self, and passes Sentence in its own self, as in its own Affections and Dispositions it feels the Deity propitious or angry: It has moreover a forward Apprehension of its approaching State. But this is no external Transaction, it has all an inward Operation of the Soul upon its self, that continues in the same unchangeable State to the Resurrection.

\* We have observed before, that the Church of Rome, by anticipating the Glory of the Saints, renders useless the whole Notion of a Resurrection, and makes the Day of Judgement absolutely superfluous. For if already every Man is judged according to his Works; if the Just are separated from the Unjust, and admitted to the Vision of God, and the Wicked are separated to their lasting Torments; What room is there for a future Judgement? Why is the Judgement repeated? Do they bring Writs of Errour to Reverse the former Judgement? Or do the Damned appeal to a milder Judge? Perhaps not, you'll say; only this is a more solemn Publication of the former Judgement to the whole World; that the Justice and Legality thereof may more evidently appear, This might be true, if there was Room for Injustice: But every damned Person is Self-condemned.

\* Nor let any one think that Souls are immediately judged after Death, for they are all detained in one common Place of Safety, till the Time comes for the great Judge to try their Actions. See *Lactantius*, B. vii. c. 21. p. 653. *Guichardus* is also cited, enumerating the Fathers, who did not believe the Souls enjoyed the Beatifick Vision, before the Resurrection, when he excuses *Pope John 22*. *Gassend de Animorum immortal.* Tom. 2. m. p. 654. Col. 2. ult.



72 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

ned before; and it is too late to appeal or argue the Equity of the Punishment, when they have been inflicted so many Ages upon the Criminal: Neither on the other Side, is it very proper to erect an Inquisition into a Title to the Possession of Heaven, against those who have had Possession thereof, and a prescriptionary Right for a thousand Years.

But to return to the Resurrection: It will be worth while to examine, to what Purpose the Resurrection will be, according to the Church of Rome. They do not allow the Happiness of the Soul to be more perfect after the Resurrection, than before, and they have actually defined; *The Happiness of Souls is not increased at the Resurrection otherwise than extensive non intensive*; Bellar. de Beat. Sanct. c. 2. & 5. that is, accidentally, but not really in themselves; the Soul remains in the same beatifick Vision, in the same Light, and Degrees of Glory, Perfection in its Operation, and Intrinseck Blessedness, it had before the Resurrection: If so, to what Purpose do these Divines raise them from the Dead, and how disagreeable to St. Paul, 1 Cor. xv. is this Addition of Happiness, without which, according to the Apostle, we are said to be of all Men most miserable, and the Immortality of the Soul of no Moment; and our Hope in this Life vain and frivolous; and without it, he does not mention any previous Blessedness or Vision of God; yet he makes it his Reward, his Crown, his Joy, 2 Tim. iv. 8. 1 Thess. iv. 13, 14. and prescribes it to others, as the firmest Comfort against the Powers of Death, and the

\* Vid. Chris. in locum.

Attacks



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 73

Attacks of temporal Evils. Moreover what *St. Paul* calls an eternal Weight of Glory, *Rom. viii. 13, 23. 2 Cor. iv. 17.* these Men scarce make the Weight of one single Grain; and what with *St. Peter* is, The never-failing Crown of Glory, is only with them a little inconsiderable Appendage thereto, *1 Pet. v. 4.*

Lastly, Christ expressly makes the Redemption of the Saints to be deferred to the End of the World, *Luke ii. 28. xiv. 14.* and the Recompence of the Just to be at the Resurrection. What a wide Difference is here, and how large a Chasm betwixt the Doctrine of the Gospel, and the Determination of the Church of *Rome*: For what the ancient Fathers sustained as an Evangelical Promise, the Foundation of Christianity, and the Anchor of our Hope, they have trifled away into a meer Nothing.

It is sufficient that this Restoration to Life, and fresh Spring of Hope, is the Gift of Christ. The Price of his Blood, and the Consequence of his Resurrection, *Heb. ii. 14, 15.* and what does not rise, is by *St. Paul* said to be lost and swallowed up in Nothing; *2 Tim. i. 10.* as may be seen in that memorable Chapter to the *Corinthians* before cited, *vid. c. 15.* This is that wonderful Effect of Divine Power, *1 Pet. i. 3. 21.* the Victory and Triumph over Death, and utmost Scope of our Perfection, *John vi. 39.* that bounds our Ambition, and makes us ἱεράγγελοι equal with Angels, and clothed with Light; and blessed with the Sight of God, *Phil. iii. 10.*

It is plain from what has been said, both from the Scriptures, and the Testimonies of the ancient Fathers, the Perfection of the Blessedness, Glory and Felicity of the Saints, and the Enjoyment of the



## 74 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

the Beatifick Vision, depends entirely upon the Resurrection, and is reserved to the Day of Judgement, and the Coming of our Lord. But if a more full Number of Evidences, were required to put an End to this Controversy, we could fling in the Fathers of the fourth Century; but so great a Number, rather croud and obscure, than clear the Light of the sacred Scriptures, which are sufficient of themselves upon this Head: I shall therefore only by way of Appendix, produce some of the most remarkable Ones of that Age; which may be consulted or omitted, as every Man pleases to indulge his own Will and Leisure.

### REMARKS.

Our Author proposes, in this Chapter, to prove from ancient Testimonies of the Fathers of the Church, that there is a middle State for Souls between Death and the Resurrection; which, I think, is hardly to be denied, because the New Testament is full to that Purpose; and I shall not fall out with him upon that Head.

But the different Notions of that State have formed several Sects of Christians, and caused great Animosities in the World; And though we have very little Correspondence with that State, every Man is very angry, if his Neighbour will not believe as he has done in that Affair. So fond are we, too often, of our own Conjectures and Imaginations.

The Old Testament is absolutely silent upon this Head, and we may as well pretend to find the Sun at Midnight, as any Light into that State there.

But to state the Question clearly and fairly: Fancy may supply us with Scenes, but Reason has not even Scope to play; for whether God admits few, more, or none to the Beatifick Vision before the Day of Judgement, depends more upon the hidden Mysteries of his Wisdom, than any Arguments we can find out. Pardon and Repentance are the only Keys with which we can unlock this Cabinet of Secrets; and yet they will not open to us a great Way, because God may pardon



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 73

and punish in this World only, or in the next, for ought we know to the contrary: I mean as to natural Reason, which is perfectly neuter in this Dispute.

We must first define what is the State of the Dead before we can apply any Services to them: And we may lay this down as a Maxim, *That God will never expect any Services without affording a clear Revelation of that State.*

You may say, That till we came to the Jewish Dispensation, the Knowledge of that State might be traditionally conveyed, though not expressly delivered in Writing.

It is very true, there is a Possibility, though no great Probability thereof: But when that whole Establishment was laid down in written Laws, and all those Laws are transmitted to us entire and perfect, as they were penned by *Moses* at the Direction of God, we might reasonably expect some Revelation of that State, if any Services and Duties were to be performed for departed Souls.

*The Jewish Sacrifices answered all the Parts of Christian Prayer.* Theirs is a material, and ours a mental Worship, but both applied to the same Ends. Their burnt Sacrifices for the Atonement of Sins, were Services, supplied by our continual Prayers for that Purpose. Their Thanksgiving Offerings, their Trespass-Offerings, and their Offerings for the Sins of Ignorance, are made up by our Eucharistical Sacrifice, our Prayers of Thanksgiving, and our imploring God's Mercy every Day for the past Follies and Imperfections of our Lives: But in none of theirs are there any Commemorations for the Dead, any Peace-Offerings for them, or Expiations for their Sins applied in that State: And when we come to Offerings for the People, there is no Hint of any Communication of the Church beyond, with the Church on this side the Grave. And as there is so little Light into that State, in the whole System of the Levitical Sacrifices, such a Book as Dr. *Burner's*, in that Age, would have brought the Author under the Notion of a Wizzard, a Diviner, a Teller of Dreams, all Abominations to the *Jews*; and he might have felt the Punishment prescribed in *Levit. xx.* to be cut off from the People.

I lay this down, therefore, as a Maxim, That if Prayers for the Dead are Services of Duty, since Christianity took Place in the World under the *Jewish* Dispensation, Sacrifices were equally so; and as there are none such, we may safely conclude, the Dead are not in a Condition of wanting our Prayers, nor are we required to bestow them.

When



## 76 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

When we come to the New Testament, we have a plain and clear Revelation of the Resurrection, and that necessarily with a Judgement implies a middle State; and all the Doctor says upon this Head has Reason with it: And I can never be induced to believe that Persons are tried after they have been admitted to the Beatifick Vision, nor after they have been condemned to eternal Misery.

What Discourses our blessed Saviour might make to his Apostles in his common Conversation, I cannot say; and that only can be the Foundation for any Quotations from the Fathers upon that Head, to whom these Discourses might be traditionally delivered down, yet I do not find they say much: And as for the Notions of Repentance and Satisfaction beyond the Grave, and Melioration, the Scriptures and the Offices of our Church suppose the contrary.

I know there have been large Pretences to Discoveries lately made, but I cannot find any Exoticks have been brought from that World; all have grown up in the Brains of some People here, the Products of warm Fancies, heated by Enthusiasm. By the Progress, indeed, some Men have made, we may not at all despair of a perfect Plan of that other World; the Apartments laid out, and the cool Shades of Paradise and *Abraham's Bosom* perfectly defined: Together with the Delineation of the Land of Misery and Repentance. These are the bold Advances of some Men against the evident Pleasure of God, who has drawn a Curtain betwixt, we can never see through, and he has purposely concealed these Mysteries from us.

All the Fathers say thereof, is no more than the natural Inferences from divine Revelation: And, as the Saints are no where in the Scripture promised the immediate Crown of Glory, they crouded Patriarchs, Martyrs, and all into one common Place, into the *Inferiora Terrarum*, whither Christ was supposed to go after his Crucifixion; nor do we in the least Question, but *Abraham's Bosom* was the common Appellation of that State with the *Jews*. When our blessed Saviour told the Parable of the rich Man and *Lazarus*, we do not find the Disciples asked any Questions what *Abraham's Bosom* was, nor were in any Surprize upon the Discovery of that new World.

Indeed, the Notion of Purgatory, if admitted to be true, has opened a large Communication with that World: But when I consider the Freshness of those Discoveries in a dark Age, and long after our blessed Saviour's Departure, I can no more credit that,



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 77

that, than I can Mr. A. C's Revelations, that fill the Heads of some of my old Friends with Hopes of magnificent Rewards there, for their Sufferings here.

What are the Enjoyments of unbodied Spirits is very hard to tell, but from a little Contemplation on our selves here we may guess; and I shall just transiently remark, though there is Scope enough for a Treatise.

The more the Soul is affected with Matter, the more dull are all our Speculations upon this Head, and the more our Idea's of this World croud in upon us, the more difficult it is to separate the true Way of Thinking in the Soul, by which we may form a Notion of the Soul in a State of Separation.

Mr. Locke has the Boldness to deny, that the Soul has any innate Idea's: But an Examination into this Opinion will clear the Way before us, for the great Question, What Enjoyment our unbodied Spirits are capable of, in our intermediate State.

*He says, Thinking is an Operation of the Soul, and not essential thereto.* On the other Hand, I lay it down as a Maxim, *No Operation of the Soul can be without Will.* I desire to know if Will is previous to Thinking, or the Effect of Thinking. If Will is previous to Thinking, it must be always active, or have some other Principle to move it; and so we must proceed in Infinitum, or allow some premier Principle always in Action: For you may as well say, a Body can move it self, as that a Spirit can act without a Principle of Action. And thus I shall bind Matter and Spirit by the same Laws. Matter cannot move it self, though it is capable of Motion. Motion is only one Species of Action; for it certainly acts upon the Bodies it impinges against; nor can any immaterial Substance act, without being endued with Action, though it is supposed capable of Action. This, if Mr. Locke had duly weighed, he would have found as self-evident as the former Proposition, and therefore the Will, if there is no superior Principle to move the Will, must be ever active. Q. E. D.

But if the Will is the Effect only of Thinking, and the Result of Conclusion from comparing and combining of Idea's, the Soul begins to act without Action; a manifest Contradiction.

I conclude, That Action is essential to the Soul, unless some external Principle puts the Soul into Action; but Matter cannot perform this, because it must be intelligent Action: And I have before proved Matter is not capable thereof, for it cannot generate a Species of Action it has not in it self: There-



## 58 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

fore I conclude, the Will is Thinking, and the highest Principle of Immaterial Action.

We cannot tell how great, how enlarged, and how glorious the Qualities of the Soul are in themselves; but this I assert, when they are cramped with a human Body, they appear infinitely less: And it is under these Disadvantages Mr. *Locke* speaks and forms his Hypothesis of the Soul, so much below its Nature; and from thence he proceeds to make it a blank Substance, to write Fool or Knave, or any Thing else upon. But I will suppose, for once, an Angel brought down from Heaven, with all his Knowledge of the Beatifick Vision, and celestial Wisdom about him, and confined to an humane Embrio, and made to pass through all the Gradations of humane Knowledge, as we do our selves: I say, this Angel would have Two distinct Perceptions, independant of each other, in so great Measure, that his Soul, modelled after the humane Manner, will think as a Child, grow up in Knowledge like a Man, and, perhaps, make a very mean Improvement in Letters, when he comes to the best.

Some will, perhaps, say, this Hypothesis destroys the Simplicity of the Soul, in making Two independant thinking Beings of One. The Consequence I deny, for they are only the Operations of one and the same Soul modelled different Ways, and humane Perception will take in humane Idea's, and exclude the Beatifick Vision from that humane Knowledge of Perception, in the same Manner, as though the Angelick Being had never enjoyed the same; for all our Idea's, let in by our Senses, are cast and moulded in the Frame of Matter, and all our Conclusions, and workings of our Idea's, are agreeable thereto, and are implicated with the Texture of the Brain, which a Fall from a Horse, or a small Contusion, will destroy, and break the Regularity of our Thoughts at once.

Yet some Powers of the Understanding, though they operate upon these humane Idea's, have a Superiority of the humane Mind, and produce a right and well-informed Understanding; and strike out those noble Conclusions some call innate Idea's, and Mr. *Locke* denies to have any Existence at all. I shall call them, for Explanation, innate Powers, to form those Conclusions of eternal Truths.

But still, it is very presumptive to say, the Soul has no innate Knowledge, because we can judge of that Being only by humane Perception; and it cannot vindicate its own Character

Charact  
Window  
independ  
cogitativ  
and that  
Understa  
and obse  
what M  
know  
independ  
this is  
vast Dis  
they see  
of Clay  
most no  
of eter  
accordin  
a Son,  
to the  
I say  
too nar  
of an  
swers.  
Idea's,  
perform  
into a  
otherwi  
a white  
the Wo  
Intellig  
he som  
perform  
the Ma  
for wh  
other  
I an  
some  
the Con  
into h  
perime  
and C  
of Vir



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 79

Character till it is divested of Flesh and Blood, and those Windows, the Senses, that let the Idea's in. The Soul has independant Powers of these Senses, and those Powers are cogitative. The Will is cogitative, as I have proved before, and that has no Dependence upon the Senses, for all the Understanding let in by them is a Weight upon the Will, and obscures rather than illustrates the Nature of Things. In what Manner the Soul may understand without the Body we know not; but we may conjecture, it sees more freely and independantly than after its Combination with Matter. And this is confirmed by the Observations we may make of the vast Difference in the Genius's of Men; so very great, that they seem different Beings, inclosed in the same Tenements of Clay. A wise Man, in whom the Soul works up the most noble Conclusions, influencing his Life by the Force of eternal Truths, into the Practice of Virtue, and acting according to the Dignity of his Nature, is as much beyond a Son, a Fool, a Rake, and a Knave, as they are Disgraces to the Figure of a Man they assume.

I say, Mr. Locke's Scheme of Humane Understanding is too narrow, and his whole Book deserves only the Name of an Essay towards Logick, for that is all the Ends it answers. He talks very much of combining and comparing Idea's, and makes it no Contradiction that Matter should perform all this; and he might as well say, the Images let into a dark Room may be modelled, formed, and ranged otherwise than mechanically by the Impression they take from a white Wall. Is it not a Contradiction for Matter to create the World? For Action to be generated from Stillness? And Intelligence from Non-Intelligence? But, for Complaisance, he sometimes allows us a Soul. When he says, all may be performed without one, he may take it back if he pleases: the Materialist has his Ends, and may make the Universe God, for when you have given Understanding, you may give any other Powers to Matter.

I am inclined to believe, Logicks and Opticks may have some Affinity; but Metaphysicks and Opticks have very little Correspondence. And surely it is a very small Progress into humane Understanding, to go no further than the Experiment of a dark Room; and though he may let in Light and Colour, he will find it very difficult to let in the Idea of Virtue, through a little Hole as big as a Pea.

I will



## 80 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

I will suppose, for, once, Mr. Locke put into a dark Room, fitted up according to the known Experiments, by Instructions from the *Savoyards* in the Streets, whose Livelihood and Gain that Vehicle is. I will suppose, moreover, all the Idea's from the external World permitted to enter in. I will, moreover, give him a Power of combining, and comparing these Idea's as he pleases; he shall have all the Variety of Birds, Fowl, and Fish before him: He may, perhaps, make a Centaur, by putting a Horse and a Man together; but I defy him to make Virtue from any Operation he can perform there. We may safely, therefore, explode that old prescriptionary Maxim, *nihil est in intellectu quod non prius fuerit in sensu*: We have nothing in the Understanding which was not first in the Senses: For the most glorious Part of humane Knowledge is Intuition. Some Truths it sees as they are, and this accounts for the universal Assent of Mankind to eternal Truths, as God himself said, Gen. iii. 22, *Behold the Man is become as one of us, to know Good and Evil*. By comparing a Right Angled and an Obtuse Angled Triangle, a mechanical Understanding may form a new Idea of the Dissimilitude; but from contemplating for ever, he will never find any moral Turpitude in one Triangle more than in the other. Moral Similitude and Dissimilitude are innate Idea's for this Reason, because the Soul forms its absolute Judgement upon them in-itself, by a Congruity and Discongruity with its own Nature: And if Good and Evil have Idea's measured by Congruity and Discongruity, the Congruity and Discongruity must be Idea's likewise, and consequently innate; otherwise we form a manifest Circle for to prove the Idea's of Good and Evil from the Congruity and Discongruity in the Soul: And to prove that Congruity and Discongruity from the Idea's of Good and Evil, is no better: But what Congruity or Discongruity can there be in the Soul, with Idea's that is not cogitative? Congruity is measuring one Being, Substance, Power and Quality by another; and the Congruity with an Idea must have the Being, Substance, Power or Quality of an Idea: When all the rational Part of Mankind form the same Conclusion, by Things being cast into the same Mould of the Understanding, the Soul must have Judgement and Perception previous to the entering in from without, of those Idea's.

Reason, you say, forms a Judgement in the Mind, by the Operations of the Understanding; but how is the Idea of Virtue let into the Understanding? The Name alone forms  
nothing

nothing  
lodged  
no simple  
The V  
contem  
termines  
others no  
is by all  
we fix a  
again

Improv  
readily de  
why, tha  
not? O  
upon one  
Sin co  
arising fr  
from cor  
The Sou  
detests it  
the Fren  
an ill Ac

The S  
love, and  
than tho  
pression.  
gruous,  
Space it  
thereof,

Upon  
ing Bein  
blance to  
its innate  
eternal T  
the Idea's  
into Brig  
Psalmist  
Judgement  
their int

The I  
Sorts, th  
material  
them we  
granted,



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 81

nothing; the Idea therefore must be the Image of something lodged in the Understanding from the Beginning; for there are no simple Ideas from without to form Conclusions from.

The Words Good and Evil we will set aside, and only contemplate the Things themselves; the Soul judges and determines that such Things are agreeable to its Nature, and others not. What is agreeable to the Nature of the Soul, is by all agreed upon to be the same; and the contrary, we fix a Word upon by way of a Mark, to distinguish it again.

Improved Reason will always form rational Conclusions, I readily do grant: But what are the Conclusions themselves, why, that such Things are agreeable to the Soul, and other not? Or why do we judge and determine with Pleasure upon one, and with Hatred to the other?

Sin comes from another Principle, not from the Pleasure arising from rational Deductions, but from a Pleasure arising from corporeal Sensations, utterly different from the other. The Soul is never pleased with Sin, it abhors, loaths, and detests it; and from thence proceeds the Heaviness, and with the French the *Pesanteur* in the Soul, upon the committing an ill Action.

The Soul certainly has a previous Disposition to hate and love, and this Disposition can arise from no other Powers than those of Thought, for Matter can take no such Impression. Matter can neither love nor hate, it being congruous, only to a determinate Quantity of Extension, of the Space it fills up, or to another Body applied to the Surface thereof, and measured by the same Lines in common.

Upon the whole I conclude, the Soul is in it self a thinking Being, the Image of God; that is, it bears, a Resemblance to his eternal Rationality, determines and judges by its innate Powers, and forms all its rational Conclusions from eternal Truths, of which it has a perfect innate Knowledge; the Ideas fall into that Mould, and there receive their Stamp into Brightness and shining Truths; for which Reason the Psalmist says of Princes, they are Gods, because upon the Judgement-Seat they are supposed to determine absolutely by their intuitive Knowledge into Right and Wrong.

The Ideas of the Soul may for once be divided into two Sorts, the Images of material and of immaterial Things; material Ideas I willingly grant, are not innate, and with them we can deal tolerably well: But I hope it will be granted, that no comparing the Similitude and Dissimilitude



## 82 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

of material Idea's, can produce other than material ones. If you combine never so many Mathematical Figures together, or to speak in other Words, Figures that have Extension and Divisibility, you only increase the Number of superficial Lines, or the solid Content of that Body, and by Division you take away what was added before, and comparing these Idea's, is only a mental Division and Subtraction, in the same manner as I compare the Proportion or haibude Numbers have to each other; and all these Idea's complex or simple, can produce no Image of immaterial Things.

How then do we come at the Originals of the Images of immaterial Things? For all Copies have Originals, and I should be glad to know from whence they are taken. You may say the immaterial World affords them, no doubt the Originals are all deposited there; but in what manner do they transmit their Idea's or Images to the Mind?

If you say it is by Reflection in the Mind; if there are no innate Idea's, none can be produced.

The Idea's that enter in by Reading and Conversation, must first have entred into the Mind of Man by some other Means, and this amounts to no more than, resolving the Question what the Earth stands upon, to say it is an Elephant, and that the Elephant stands upon a Joint-Stool; for I would ask how the first Man *Adam* came by his Idea's of Virtue and Morality? I say, they must be formed in the Mind, and that no such Formation could be without innate Idea's.

This is indeed the great Argument of all, and when this is over, we have done with the Operations of the Mind.

For Idea's that cannot enter into the Mind by the Mediation of the Senses, must enter some other way, or be formed therein, by some particular Operation of the Soul.

Inspiration I grant will furnish the Mind with Idea's, if God pleases so grant us that Kind of Inspiration: But this my Adversaries will no more grant than innate Idea's themselves; according therefore to their Scheme, that all Idea's are from without, here is no Room left for their Entrance in: I say therefore the Images must be in the Mind previous to any Operation therein that is pretended to produce them afterwards.

Mr. *Locke* allows Objects for all his Operations of the Soul; but if our Objects cannot come into the Soul in that manner, they nevertheless must be there by some other Means, because

because  
on to for  
and the  
Relation  
have an  
they are f  
Formation

But wh  
ons of th  
as judge  
telligent P  
that the V  
fore; and  
be no Wi  
to one Ob  
such Deter

The Wi  
be no Ref  
combining  
ved, produ

Moreov  
fore-ment  
telligent P  
into the F  
produce no  
the Man  
of *Virgil* in  
Powers of  
Scheme of  
than *Pinebb*  
that howev  
it has the  
of the Bod  
Perception

To call  
great Defec  
cular; for  
I desire to  
first. Unin  
do the uni  
first, and  
work upon  
awaken the  
and the Jud



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 83

because otherwise the Soul will have nothing to operate upon to form the Ideas of immaterial Things. Operations, and the Things operated, have a mutual and indissoluble Relation to each other; and Ideas for that Reason must have an indissoluble Connection with the Operation by which they are formed, as a Stamp must have the same Figure and Formation with the Impression it gives.

But when we come more nearly to consider the Operations of the Soul, you may as well know the Nature of them, as judge of Causes by the Effects. The Will must be an intelligent Principle, because it produces intelligent Effects, and that the Will is innate, has, I think, been clearly proved before; and without the Knowledge of Things the Will could be no Will, because Will supposes a particular Determination to one Object more than another; and without Intelligence no such Determination could be produced.

The Will determines all the Actions of the Soul; there can be no Reflection without a Will to reflect, nor comparing or combining Ideas; for an unintelligent Jumble, as I have proved, produces no Thought.

Moreover, Judgement is not the Consequence of the before-mentioned Operations, but previous thereto; it is an intelligent Power of the Soul; for the Letters of a Press cast into the Form of *Virgil's Aeneids*, or *Horace's Art of Poetry*, produce no Intelligence in the Letters. The Judgement of the Man who reads and understands them, makes the Sense of *Virgil* in one, as of *Horace* in the other. I conclude the Powers of the Soul are Thought, and therefore Mr. *Locke's* Scheme of Humane Understanding produces no more Thought than *Pinebeck's* Machine would do in its Way. I conclude, that however the Soul may be clouded by human Perception, it has the major Powers of Will and Judgement independant of the Body innate and co-existent, that over-bear even human Perception it self, and form eternal Truths in the Mind.

To call the Soul a *rasa Tabula*, as Mr. *Locke* does, shews great Defect of Judgement in that great Man in that particular; for let the Ideas flow into the Mind like a Torrent, I desire to know how the intelligent Operation is struck up first. Unintelligent Operation only changes Situation of Parts; do the unintelligent Ideas work upon the operative Power first, and begin the Dance; or does the operative Power work upon them as they come in. But how do these Ideas awaken the intelligent Power, awaken the Will to dispose, and the Judgement to know the Similitude and Dissimilitude



## 84 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

of Idea's, for Perception alone will cast no perfect Understanding off.

The World I hope will pardon me, if I say, Mr. *Locke's* own Idea's of Judgement and Will, are the best Argument he could have brought to prove, there are no innate Idea's; for his are new, and wretchedly patched up upon this Subject.

I need say no more of this Argument here; I have proved the Soul to have innate Judgement, and from thence proceeds in Man's Opinion, the universal Consent to universal Truths. I shall crave Leave to make one Observation more upon the Soul's Improvement in Knowledge, from the Gradations of our Infancy, Juvenility, and more experienced Age.

The Soul may receive a new Sort of Knowledge by the Windows of the Senses, and may improve therein; before the organical Construction of the Body is impaired, and when the Spirits are vege and vigorous, it is let into the Secrets of the mechanical Operations of Nature, as to the World about us, and of Men and material Things; and in short all the Knowledge that depends upon our Idea's is let in by our Senses. And so far it may be said to have a more large and extensive Knowledge than it had before.

But the Knowledge of immaterial Things is, for ought we know, retarded by the corporeal Union, which indeed I believe conceals a great Part of our selves from our selves; but still we may find out the Image of our Maker in several Instances of the Disposition of the Soul.

It seems in this World never to be at rest, as though its Situation was uneasy, and it aimed at something better; and even by its Errours we may form a Notion of its right Disposition.

Some aim at Power, others Riches, and some few Knowledge; but as there is no Summit in any Part of human Life, the most fortunate in obtaining what they Wish and Love, are always upon the Step, on this Side the Grave. Knowledge is an unsatiable Thirst; Power an unsathomable Gulph, and Riches an inexhaustible Fund. When the Body is at Rest, and the Appetites blunted by Satiety, the Soul struggles in the Breast for one or other of these; and very few Men can by Philosophy and Reason temper their Minds in such a manner, as to keep the Soul perfectly in Peace in this State. For if it gets above the more sordid Views of Ambition and Covetousness, every new Accession of Knowledge is delightful; the Soul makes use of his Contemplation

upon  
ration  
it stop  
Transa  
of God  
chine;  
he hate  
Prospee  
someth  
The Se  
and fair  
so large  
are laid  
World  
and to  
I con  
cealed f  
Conjec  
now I  
in the  
than it  
it want  
Happin  
If it  
future  
wait to  
this mo  
ful and  
This  
The Do  
rection,  
Difficult  
seem rat  
of the  
same;  
Fathers  
Mr. A  
bles wi  
whole B  
to weak  
Scriptur  
sufficient  
us we f  
after the



upon its new Improvements, to form Speculations for Admiration or Use; and what Wrings and Tortures it finds when it stops at the Load-stone, and other unaccountable secret Transactions of Nature. Man seldom acquiesces in the Power of God, he affects to know every Spring of this created Machine; and when he is diverted from this inward Prospect, he hates Bounds to his Sight, he craves the most unconfined Prospect, and grasps at Infinity. These inward Passions are something more than the Effects of a Combination of Ideas. The Souls of Brutes are conscious, and they have some low and faint Resemblances of Reason, but their Views are not so large; their Peace is soon procured, and all their Cares are laid asleep with Food and Rest. But Man's Peace in this World is scarce to be had, his Soul is too great for his Body, and to use Mr. Dryden's Expression, frets it to Decay.

I conclude, what Rest it enjoys in a middle State, is concealed from our Knowledge, and we can come at only naked Conjectures, without Ground, and without Foundation. But now I am brought back to my first Assertion, that the Soul in the other State may think and see much more clearly than it does in this; that it is a poor and mean Notion, that it wants human Perception and human Ideas to perfect its Happiness in the middle State.

If it has no conscious Guilt, if it has a sure Confidence of future Happiness, and is at perfect Peace, the rest we must wait to know when we are dead; and I shall conclude with this moral Observation, *It is better to know with Comfort, than to feel and know.*

This is as much as need to be said upon this middle State. The Doctor goes further, and when he comes to the Resurrection, denies the Resurrection of the same Body. The Difficulties he and others, particularly Mr. Locke, stop at, seem rather to proceed from a too low Notion of the Power of the Deity, than from any rational Objection against the same; for the Scripture is plain against him, and so are the Fathers.

Mr. Locke, instead of arguing like a fair rational Man, quibbles with the Word Identity, sometimes to take away the whole Body; sometimes a Part thereof, and all under a Cover to weaken the Power of Divine Revelation, and to make the Scriptures seem contradictory, or to give an uncertain and insufficient Light. Dr. Burnet is more candid, and plainly tells us we shall have new Bodies framed, as Cases for the Soul, after the Resurrection,



## 86 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Identity, to give a clear Notion thereof, as all Definitions of this Nature will bear, is to be distinguished first.

An Identity of Essence, when any Particle of Matter receives Existence from the Power of God, Identity is the Duration of that Existence, till that Particle of Matter is annihilated.

Identity of Genus is relative only, as when all Matter of a certain Sort of Combination, by Similitude, and Comparison is said to be of the same kind.

Identity of Species, is when the Divisions of the Genus are compared together; and one general Term is affixed thereto; for Example:

Human Nature is a general Definition, and humane Nature is always the same, while the Similitude thereof is preserved in the World. Man and Woman are two distinct Species of that Genus; and while the Similitude is preserved, the same Species will remain.

Therefore Flux and Reflux of Parts while the Similitude remains, does not destroy the Identity of the Species; and a River is said to be the same River, though the Identical Essence of the Parts is not two Moments there together, if the Similitude remains.

But a Discontinuation of this Similitude destroys the Identity; as when a River is dried up, and flows no more for some Ages, and the Channel is opened again by Art, or by some natural Accident, it will be termed a New River. I term therefore general or specific Identity, a Continuance of Similitude in the Manner of existing of particular Beings; and if even the Parts of my Soul were to fly, or wear off as the Parts of my Body do, in decay, I shall be still the same Man standing at the Resurrection I was when I committed my Sin seven Years before, though not one Identical Particle of that first Composition then subsisted.

But the Intervals between Death and the Resurrection destroy that Continuance; nay, no Man will say St. Paul's Church is the same with that burnt down in King Charles's Reign; nor that my Son proceeding from my Loins is the same Man with me; because he has not the same Similitude of Existence at the same time with me.

The Nature of this Similitude is next to be considered; it is a Succession of Parts, under the same Dimensions of Space, and in the same Manner. The Prior Parts existed before, to keep the Denomination of the same Body; but to keep the Denomination of the same Species, it must have ex-

ternal

ternal  
Qualit  
is the  
never  
This  
destroy  
many  
could  
rical D  
Body  
Part  
is eno  
the le  
so be  
To  
is no  
there  
ven  
Ident  
tion  
Putre  
new  
Lock  
pear  
bring  
be pr  
you  
wha  
tion  
goin  
his  
for  
that  
the  
the  
w.  
and  
to  
the  
quic  
into  
of  
of  
star  
the



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 87

ternal Similitude, as to Figure, and internal Similitude, as to Qualities and Operations; for none will say, a Barber's Block is the same with the real Man, though the Face be coloured never so nearly to represent Flesh and Blood.

This brings me to the next Dispute, how far *Mancation* destroys this Identity. For as a River, by being divided into many Streams, may lose its Name; so would Man, if he could be supposed split into Halves, and subject to Numerical Division: But as he consists of Soul and Body, the Body is the Mansion of the Soul, and the pulling down a Part thereof, will not destroy the Species, provided there is enough left for the Soul to dwell in and animate. There the Integrality that gives Denomination to the Species, is to be found.

To conclude, if a Body moulders in the Grave, and there is no Succession of Parts to keep up the Integrality thereof, there can be no relative Identity for the Reasons above given; and if the same Body arises, it must be an essential Identity of the Parts brought together, in the same Situation they were in before the Continuity was dissolved by Putrefaction in the Grave; for otherwise it is Creation, a new Formation, but no Resurrection of the same Body. Mr. Locke therefore and Dr. Burnet, both contradict, as will appear the plain Sense of Scripture; and I am not afraid of bringing it to the Decision of 1 Cor. xv. 12. *Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the Dead, how say some among you, that there is no Resurrection of the Dead.* I desire to know what Consequence St. Paul could draw for a new Formation of a Body, to case a Soul after Death, from Christ's going down to the Grave, and rising from the Dead with his Body: There could be no Argument in this Chapter, for a Resurrection, if the Analogy was not perfectly the same; that we are to rise as he did; and that St. Paul referred to the Resurrection of the Body, is plain, from the Strain of the Argument, running in one continued Concatenation, to v. 35. *But some Man will say: How are the Dead raised up, and with what Body do they come?* He applies this Question to the Identity, and Non-Identity of the Body; and further argues, v. 36. *Thou Fool, that which thou sowest does not quicken except it die.* The Similitude he uses of Seed, put into the Ground, and the immediate Effect of Quickening of Vegetation, would be very ill applied to the Formation of a new independant Body, from the old one, at the Distance of Ages. Moreover the Meaning of the Text, is, that



## §8. Of the STATE of the DEAD.

the old Body must ferment and putrify, to put vegetative Life into the growing Embryo in its Womb; for both Vegetation and Animal Growth, proceed from Fermentation. This Philosophy, St. Paul knew very well; and I say, the Discontinuance from the Death to the Resurrection, can have no Relation to the close Connection between the Cause and the Effect: It might have Relation indeed, to a Succession of Seeds, but here is no Action, no Communication, but a long Series of dead Time and Non-existence between.

Upon the whole, the Scope of St. Paul's Argument is this. To the Question, What Sort of Body must ours be at the Resurrection? It is a mean Objection; for as a Seed put into the Ground putrifies, and sends forth by that fermenting Putrefaction its own Species, quickened and in full vegetative Life, so shall this Body of ours, after Putrefaction in the Grave, *After its being sown in Corruption, rise in Incorruption.* v. 42. i. e. After its being sown corruptible and subject to Putrefaction, rise in Incorruption, glorified and solid: It is, says he, *sown a natural Body, and raised a spiritual Body.* v. 44. I think the 54th Verse puts an entire End to this Dispute. *So when this corruptible shall have put on Incorruption, and this Mortal shall have put on Immortality,* he refers to that Corruptibility mentioned upwards, v. 2. sown in the Ground, and there putrifying, and afterwards raised in Incorruption.

But though this Chapter is incontestably plain; our Adversaries will by no Means acquiesce therein: They put Cases of Man-Eaters, and the Impossibility of the Identical Parts being in Two Men, at the same Time; as though the Power of God that made the World, could not by his providential Care, prevent such Contradictions from coming in the Way; and Mr. Locke himself, would not pretend to say, there is a Nation in the World that subsists upon Man's Flesh only; so that the Supposition, is purely imaginary and arbitrary.

There are other Texts moreover, as full, though not so Philosophical as the 1 Cor. xv. though nothing will serve Mr. Locke, except his own Way of Expression. The Sameness of the Sense will not serve his own, without the Sameness likewise of his Way of Expression; as Mr. Holdsworth has lately observed: Were St. Paul says, Rom. viii. 11. *He that raised up Christ from the Dead, shall quicken your mortal Bodies.* Here is no Room for a Metaphor, except Christ rose metaphorically, according to the ancient *Gnosticks*. He says expressly, the same Power that raised up Christ from the Dead shall quicken our mortal Bodies.

This

The  
very  
wards,  
for ou  
same  
cession  
surrect  
Bodies  
Hades  
into H  
before  
The  
Conver  
the Lar  
be fast  
come  
is plain  
vile fir  
It i  
Vigou  
preslee  
Tradit  
they  
narrow  
same  
crislee  
Punish  
in He  
that i  
mittin  
the U  
their  
it a S  
Th  
bamb  
contr  
our I  
nume  
neral  
the s  
with  
for K  
whic  
the l



This squares with the Epistle to the *Corinthians*; for it was very common for the Apostles first, and the Fathers afterwards, to make the Resurrection of Christ an Argument for our Resurrection, because he was to pass through the same Changes in the short Space from his Death to his Ascension into Heaven, as we are from our Deaths to our Resurrection and Reception into Heaven. I conclude, that our Bodies are to be quickened as his was, we are to go to Hades as he has done, and we are likewise to be received into Heaven, and the Beatifick Vision, whither he is gone before to prepare a Place.

The Analogy is in Part carried on, *Phil. iii. 20, 21. For our Conversation is in Heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall change our vile Body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious Body.* This will by no Means come under the Notion of Creation, new Formation, &c. It is plain, therefore, we shall see him in a glorious Body, as our vile sinful Ones will at that Time become.

It is very surprizing to me, Men should argue with so much Vigour and Strenuousness against an Hypothesis so plainly expressed in Scripture, and so strongly asserted by the universal Tradition of the Church, when no rational Objection lies, and they on their Side only contend to straiten the Power and narrow the Providence of God. It seems most rational, the same Bodies should rise. The Companions for which we sacrificed often too much, should give us a particular Sensation of Punishment adequate to our Crimes. As for our Enjoyments in Heaven with our spiritualized Bodies, I shall say less, because that is a Mystery, and I am not, with some Men, above submitting to Mysteries, who act more like Boys just come from the University, than like rational Creatures; they confess by their Arguments the Weakness of human Reason, and yet give it a Superiority over divine Wisdom.

This seems to be a very whimsical Heresy. The *Gnosticks* bambouled away all the corporeal Resurrection. These Men contrive in their own Heads a Scheme for a new Body, and our Dr. *Blarnes* argues in such a peculiar Manner against the numerical Resurrection, that I was ready to laugh at his Funeral Oration. His Horrour and Dread for the Resurrection of the same Body, flow from an Apprehension, that his old dry withered Carcase should be preferred to his juvenile One, ripe for Pleasure, and florid in its Bloom; that his Fingers with which he guided his Pen to write the harmonious Theory of the Earth, should be laid aside, and his old Carcase only be taken



20 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

ken into Heaven. There is some Modesty, indeed, in not giving God the blemished of his Flock; but still it is to be hoped, the old Man was better prepared for Heaven than the young One; and I am very much surprized to find the Doctor in so much Concern about ugly Faces there. This is, indeed, a real Subject of Ridicule, and it is equally impertinent to ask what Body shall Rise, when St. Paul expressly says: The Body that putrifies in the Grave shall be quickened, put on Incorruptibility and Immortality.

Thus much is sufficient, for the present, to observe, concerning the Scripture Proofs for the Resurrection of the same Body, I need not insist on more, when these are so full and expressive to the Purpose.

The Primitive Christians took up this Doctrine, *Iustin Martyr*, *Athenogoras*, and *Irenaeus*; to whom I may add *Tertullian*, who argues, That it would be very unjust, that the Body, torn and rent by Martyrdom should be rejected, and a new one substituted to be crowned with Glory. He says, it was the Heretick *Lucas's* Opinion, That at the Resurrection the Body and Soul would be dissolved, and a Third Being substituted in their Stead, in his Book *de Resurrectione Carnis*: And he has this Philosophical Expression, *Corpus id individuum resurgit*, That very individual Body rises.

If so, it is evident the Oppugners of this Doctrine were the Hereticks of that Age, who crucified Christ in Effigy, and gave him only the Effigies of an Incarnation, and to us, the Effigies of a Resurrection.

**APPEN**



# APPENDIX

**I**N the fourth Age, \* we have the Author of the Questions and Answers to the Orthodox, in Justin Martyr, all agreeable to Justin's own Opinion of the State of the Dead. In his Answer to Question LX, concerning the Time of Retribution, he has these Words, ἄτι γὰρ ὡδ ἀναστασις ἡ ἰσότης βεβαιώσιν ἡ ἀνταπόδοσις γίνεται, there is no Retribution before the Resurrection, for the past Transactions of our Lives, and clearing the Objection of the Thief's being taken into Paradise (Question and Answer 76) he adds, ὅπερ οὐ γίγνεται τῷ ἄνθρωπῳ, &c. The Thief by entering into Paradise, received this Benefit, by having this Reward for his Faith, to be thought worthy, to be joined with the Congregation of Saints, to be reserved to the Day of Resurrection, and general Reward.

St. Chrysostome lays so great a Stress upon the Resurrection, that without the same, he renders the Immortality of the Soul of no Effect; and all the Saints are to have, before that Time, of very little Consequence, as to the Fulness of Beatitude and Remuneration. Consult him upon 1 Cor. xv. upon these Words, *If in this Life only*, &c. τί λέγεις, ὦ Παῦλε, ὡς, &c.

*What sayest thou, Paul? How in this Life only can we have Hope, unless the Body rises, seeing the Soul is to remain, and be Immortal? He answers him-*

---

\* See, Gerard. de Mort. Tom. viii. pag. 396, 397.



## 192 . Of the STATE of the DEAD.

self, Though the Soul were to remain, and be a thousand Times over immortal; yet it would never receive those ineffable Blessings without the Body, nor its Punishments; all Things will be manifest before the Tribunal of Christ, that every one may receive what he has done in his Body, whether good or ill. Therefore, the Apostle says, That if our Hope were only in this Life, we should be the most Miserable, for unless the Body were to rise, the Soul could not receive its Crown, being not invested with the Happiness of Heaven \*.

Chrysostome, explains and confirms the same Opinion, by Examples and Similitudes, upon Heb. xi. 39, 40. These received not the Promise; that they without us, should not be made perfect; his Words are, *οὐκ ἔλαβον τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν, ἀλλ' ἐν ἡμῖν ἐστί, &c.*

† They have not received, but expect their Reward. They who by their Deaths have closed up so many Afflictions, have not they received their Reward? But you

---

\* Quid ais Paule quomodo in hac vitâ tantum spem habemus, nisi corpus resurgat, licet anima maneat & immortalis sit? Respondet sibi, Licet maneat anima, licet secenties esset immortalis, ut est: bona illa ineffabilia sine Corpore non reportaret; Quemadmodum nec puniretur: Omnia enim manifestabuntur ante Tribunal Christi, ut unusquisque quæ fecit itidem recipiat in corpore sive bona sive mala. Propterea, dicit Apostolus, si in hac vitâ tantum spem in Christo haberemus, omnium essemus miserrimi. Nisi enim resurgat corpus, incoronata manet Anima, extra illam beatitudinem quæ est in cælis.

† Nondum mercedem receperunt, sed adhuc expectant. Qui istoc modo obire in Tantâ Tribulatione, nondum receperunt illi? Tantum habent Temporis ex quo vicerunt, nec dum receperunt mercedem: vos autem, nondum finito certamine, moras ægrè fertis. Cogitate, quæso, quid & quantum sit, Abrahamum, & Apostolum Paulum, expectantes, quando tu consummatus fueris, ut tunc tandem possint Mercedem recipere, &c.

who



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 93

who have not gone through the Skirmish, are impatient. Consider, if it is enough for Abraham, and the Apostle Paul, to expect, if you likewise wait for your Consummation, before you have your Reward: And he proceeds to shew in the Series of this Argument, that the first Martyr Abel, and Noah the Preacher of Righteousness, were not to receive their Crown before us, *ἕνα ὥστε πᾶσι τῶν σιφά-  
ρων ἑκατόν*, all shall receive their Crown at one and the same Time. The Interval, for these Holy Souls, he calls *ἕνα ὥστε*, and very often Abraham's Bosom, as you may see, *Hom. 24. upon 1 Cor. i. Hom. 40. upon Genesis*, all the Just, he says, from the Time of Abraham to the End of the World, have no other Ambition and Desire, than to rest in his Bosom; but this Bosom of Abraham was never taken for the chief and supreme Glory. All this is confirmed in his first Sermon upon the Resurrection, in which, he postpones all our Hope and Prospect of Reward, to the Coming of our Lord; nor have we, according to him, any other than what arises from the Comforts we reap from Tribulation, and our Exercises in Christian Patience and Fortitude, that invigorate and strengthen the Soul, and to use his own Words, Philosophize it as we see Wrestlers more firmly knit in their Robustness by use and striving, *ἕτοιμα ἔσμεν ἐν ἀγῶνι τῆς ἀρετῆς, καὶ πολεμεῖν ἢ τὸ ἔργον ἀνοίγειν, καὶ ἢ τὸ ἕλκεν τῆς διω-  
ραγμένης, καὶ πολεμεῖν ἢ τὰς ἀμοιβὰς ἡμῶν ἀπολα-  
βεῖν*, (We see here, they are all upon the same Foot with Chrysostome) *μέγαν ἐπὶ τοῦ κατὰ μέ-  
τρον, τῆς ψυχῆς ἡμῶν φιλοσοφώμενος καθίστα-  
μενος*.

So we striving in the Ways of Virtue before Heaven shall be opened, before the Soul of Man shall



## 94 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

shall be present, and we shall ever have our Re-tribution, we shall in some Measure have received our Reward, in that our Souls shall be improved in Knowledge \*.

So much for the State and Blessedness of the Saints before the Resurrection, according to St. *Chrysostome*. It may be objected, perhaps, that Fa-ther in other Places extravagantly extols this in-termediate Happinefs. This may be, for Orators are often carried by Heat into Expressions not weighed, to a Scruple, in a Balance. They may be naturally led to this in popular Discourses, and Funeral Orations, to exalt the Happinefs of those who die in the Lord, and none to diminish the same, except the naked Truth. It is certainly good to comfort the Mind against the Powers of Death, and to sustain it against the Terrours of Martyrdom, to raise the Affections, and confirm their Piety, to speak warmly of this future Hap-pinefs of the Saints; where it would answer no Ends to lay it down coolly, and in faint Colours. I find, therefore, the Truth and the real Senti-ments of an Author upon this Subject, in one Place below the Mark more worth than all the Rhetor-ical Flourishes above it. It has been before ob-served, the Preacher's Words are not to be taken in the same Sense they strike upon the Ears of the Audience: For Orators speak and inculcate by Hyperboles, as they are carried away by Oppor-

---

\* *Note*, This Homily of St. *Chrysostom*'s upon the Resurrection, is pretty plain, as to the *middle* State; he says, after the Body is destroyed, she'll be renewed every Day, and improve in Wis- dom and Virtue both; *αναβίβας διανοίας & αυταύστηρας* *παιδείας* *ἀντιμαρτυρίας* *ὑπομνήδων* *ὑποπόσεις* *ὑποστάσεις* *ὑποστάσεις*, as is above in the same Homily.

tunity;

tunity  
Stream  
Affecti  
their I

We  
tors,  
ten th  
with a  
ven, a  
ven, I  
comm  
ly, by  
ham's  
Blesse  
Parad  
called  
Heav  
have  
some  
vine  
that  
dies.  
and v  
befor  
he fa  
maki  
sacred  
ambi  
clear  
most  
the  
and  
Sens

\*  
†



tunity, Place, Times, and Persons, down by the Stream of their Orations, by the Rapidity of their Affections: This is purposely done to carry on their Design.

We therefore do not wonder the sacred Orators, for their Compassion to the Dead, or to soften the Living, sweetened their Expressions, as with a regard to the immediate Possession of Heaven, and the direct Vision of the Lord; for Heaven, sometimes, largely taken, extends even to the common Felicity of Souls after Death. Frequently, by the Fathers, it is styled Paradise, or *Abraham's Bosom*, or the intermediate State of the Blessed; \* says St. *Augustine*, The general Name of Paradise is, when we live happily, and is commonly called Heaven. † The Saints enjoy an internal Heaven after Death, the external they cannot have without the Body, and therefore St. *Chrysostome* must speak of the intellectual Vision and divine Presence. The Soul will be nearer to God in that spiritual State, than in this Prison of our Bodies. We shall, in a manner, feel the Efficacy and virtual Presence of God, as though he were before our Eyes. But we can never interpret what he says of the glorious Vision of God, without making him offer Violence to himself; for in the sacred Authors we must observe this Rule, That ambiguous Expressions must be compared with the clear and undoubted Ones, and the severe and most rigid with the loose and popular adapted to the common Understanding. This is the plain and easy Way to come at the true and genuine Sense.

---

\* St. *Aug.* Ep. 37. *De Civ. ad Lat.* l. 2. c. 54.

† *Sext. Senen.*



• 26 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Theodoret, Oecumenius, Theophylact, Euthymius, were of the same Opinion. \* Theodoret delivers his upon Heb. xi. at the End, and says; That all are rewarded not one before or after another, with a Crown of Glory at the Resurrection, without any Contest for Victory and Precedency; And, upon the Words of the Apostle, v. 39, 40. And these all having obtained a good Report, through Faith, received not the Promise. — V. 4. That they without us should not be made perfect; he has these Words, οἱ μὲν ἐν τούτων ἀγωνίᾳ τοσούτοις ἔτηλιντο. And, Many were their strivings, but they have not yet received their Crown; for the God of the Universe expects more yet, that after the Race is finished, all who have been victorious may receive the Rewards and Crowns of their Victory.

† In the same Sense, Oecumenius interprets the Apostle concerning those ancient Heroes, famous for their Faith, ἐκείνοι, φησι, καὶ θνήσκουσιν ἀγέρας, τὴν ἡμῶν περιμένοντες ἐπίστασιν. They, says the Apostle, are still unrewarded, expecting our Ministration or Coming. So says Theophylact upon the Place, οἱ εἰσηλθόντες πάντες αἱ τοι, &c. All these Saints, when they have given Testimony of having pleased God by Faith, have not yet received the Heavenly Promises. § He says the very same upon the following Verse, in a manner, copied from St. Chrysostome, and is the very same

\* See many other Fathers upon this Head, in the Notes of Coribolus to Justin 44. Col. 1. & 2.

† Eorum ergo fuerunt tot & tanta certamina, sed illi tamen coronas nondum acceperunt: expectat enim universorum Deus aliorum certamina, ut, soluto stadio, omnes qui victoriam fuerint affecti, simul victores renunciet & remuneretur. Theoph. Heb. 11.

§ Illi inquit Apostolus sedent irremunerati, sine premio, nostram expectantes ministrationem vel adventum. Oecumenius Heb. 12.

likewise

likewise  
who was  
dise from  
St. Luke  
The Thie  
Kingdom  
St. Paul  
present, t  
according  
is the sa  
Thief, p  
Paradise  
then gave  
of his Kin  
eternal B  
§ None of  
Apostle k  
Kingdom  
Resurrect  
This i  
his Greek  
As to  
lary, An  
the Deac  
Psalms,  
Upon th

\* Dicti  
per fidem  
norum pro  
† Latro  
est Regnu  
nes, quos  
tiarum. T  
§ Nond  
luti magn  
regnum te



likewise upon *Luke* xxiii. \* concerning the Thief, who was to be in Paradise. He distinguishes Paradise from Heaven, and in that Manner reconciles *St. Luke* with the Apostle *St. Paul*, *ὁ γὰρ ληστής*, &c. The Thief was received into Paradise, but not into the Kingdom of Heaven; he will, follow with the rest, whom *St. Paul* mentions; Paradise is allotted to him for the present, the Kingdom of spiritual Rest. † *Euthymius*, according to the Interpreter upon this very Place, is the same, That Christ knowing the Intention of the Thief, promised what was most desirable to him: The Paradise he had learned the Notion of from *Moses*, and then gave him his Conversation in Paradise, the Pledge of his Kingdom to come, and of that ineffable Fruition of eternal Benefits, WHICH EYE HATH NOT SEEN, &c. § None of the Just have yet received the Promise as the Apostle has taught us; afterwards he shall have the Kingdom delivered to him, at the Time of the universal Resurrection.

This is sufficient concerning *St. Chrysostome*, and his Greek Followers.

As to the *Latins* of the Fourth Century, see *Hilary*, *Ambrose*, and *Austin*, concerning the State of the Dead. *Hilary*, in his Commentary upon the *Psalms*, frequently touches upon this Argument. Upon the 139th *Psalms*, he makes it an universal and

\* *Dicti omnes sancti, etsi testimonium haberent, quod Deo per fidem placebant, nondum tamen assecuti sunt cœlestium Bonorum promissiones. Theoph. in loc.*

† *Latro igitur Paradisum assecutus est, non autem assecutus est Regnum cœlorum; assequetur autem quando & cæteri omnes, quos Paulus enumeravit. Interea Paradisum habet impræsentiarum. Theoph. Luc. 23.*

§ *Nondum enim quisquam justorum accepit promissionem, veluti magnus docuit Paulus. Postmodum verò, & huic traderet regnum tempore universalis Resurrectionis. Eusby. in Luc. 23.*



98 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

inviolable Law for every Soul to go to *Hades*, and says, it was done by Christ, that he might compleat his humane Course.

He says the same upon *Psalms* cxxxviii; That Souls are kept in *Hades* to the Day of Judgement; and the same upon *Pf.* liii. and *Pf.* li. and upon these Words, *The Lord shall preserve thy coming in*, *Pf.* cxx. he says, This Keeping does not refer to this World, but to the Expectation of future Good, when departing from this Body, in order to enter into the Heavenly Kingdom, all the Faithful are in the Custody of the Lord, and there reserved in the Bosom of *Abraham*.

This is *Hilary's* Doctrine concerning the State of the Dead. As for *St. Ambrose*, let the Reader peruse Chap. x, xi, xii. *de bono Mortis*. In the Tenth Chapter he acknowledges these Receptacles for the Dead to the Day of Judgement: \* *That Day of crowning*, says he, *is expected by all, that upon that Day the Vanquished may be put to Shame, and the Conquerours receive their Palm of Victory*. And in the Eleventh Chapter he enlarges upon the Degrees of Joy before the Resurrection. Fourthly, says he, *§ they begin to reflect upon their State of Rest, as upon their future State of Glory; and delighting themselves in their Habitations, they enjoy a perfect Tranquillity, invested with Guards of Angels*. Lastly, in Book 2, concerning *Cain* and

\* *Coronæ enim dies, inquit, expectatur ab omnibus, ut lotra eum diem & victi erubescant, & victores palmam adipiscantur victoriz. Amb. de bono Mortis.*

§ *Quartò, ait, quia incipiunt, intelligere requiem suam, & futuram suam gloriam prævidere: eaque se consolatione mulcentes, in habitaculis suis cum magnâ tranquillitate requiescunt, stipatæ præsidiiis Angelorum, ib.*

*Abel,*

Of  
Abel, he  
supposes  
Day of  
these W  
dy after  
to its fu  
St. A  
ry cantio  
ons, de  
ving this  
places a  
rated fro  
tations,  
surrectio  
his Expo  
Laur. C  
Civ. Dei  
ses. L.  
To pr  
this, or  
pose; b  
all the  
fy, flow  
mitive P  
to the  
other is  
the Chu  
Dead.  
duce the  
in the  
ther sup  
gration

† Solvi  
men futur



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 99

Abel; he is over and above Reason, in that he supposes the Souls of the Dead to remain to the Day of Judgement uncertain of their Fate, in these Words; † *The Soul is delivered from the Body after the End of this Life, and kept in Suspense to its future Judgement.* So far for Ambrose.

St. Augustine comes next, who, though not very cautious and modest in delivering his Opinions, declines the Envy and Difficulty of resolving this Question; nevertheless, in general, he places all pious Souls (except the Martyrs) separated from Heaven and Glory, in secret Habitations, to the Day of Judgement and of the Resurrection; as the Reader may see, if he consults his Exposition upon *Pf. xxxvi. &c. Enchiridion ad Laur. C. 118. Genes. ad lit. L. 12, Ch. 35. de Civ. Dei, L. 12, Ch. 9. Retract, L. 1, C. 14, Confes. L. 9, Ch. 3.*

To produce a greater Cloud of Witnesses from this, or from the succeeding Ages, is to no Purpose; but there are Two Heads from whence all the Arguments, relating to this Controversy, flow; the First is the Opinions of the primitive Fathers, who suppose the intermediate State to the Resurrection an imperfect one; and the other is deduced from the Use and Practice of the Church in its Prayers and Oblations for the Dead. As to the Opinions themselves, I shall reduce them to Two: The First places the Saints in the Millennium to reign with Christ; the other supposes Souls to be purged in the Conflagration of the World, before they are to arrive

---

† Solvitur à corpore anima post finem vitæ hujus, adhuc tamen futuri judicii ambigua suspenditur,



## 100 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

at Heaven, and the Vision of God: Each have their Patrons and Defenders, and most in the primitive Ages of the Church, as will appear in the Sixth and Ninth Chapters; yet both concur that the Saints are not immediately to enjoy the supream Degree of Happiness, the Heavenly Glory, and the Vision of God; and that they must have a Purgation before they can arrive at these. Whether, in these Opinions, they were right or wrong on either Side, they both agree with us as to the main Point, concerning the intermediate State.

The other Head, which includes universal Consent, is the Use and Practice of the Church in its sacred Offices and Liturgies concerning the Dead. In these Liturgies we have not only Thanksgivings and Commemorations, and Oblations, with which we have nothing to do here, but even Supplications for the Dead; from whence it is plain, in their Opinion, the Souls, for whom these Prayers were made, were not arrived to their highest Glory, and the beatifick Vision of God; yet these Prayers were offered up for the greatest Saints, the most eminent Patriarchs, Prophets, Apostles, Evangelists, Martyrs, and most illustrious Lights of the Church, as appears from the ancient Liturgies, the dubious and interpolated ones, as well as from the Constitutions of *Clement*, *Cyprian*, *Dionysius the Areopagite*, and *Epiphanius*.

Whether this Practice is laudable in itself or not; it is founded upon this, That the Souls of all Kinds, except that of Christ, were detained in *Hades* to the Resurrection, and that these Prayers were supposed to be beneficial to them before their Consummation. I say expressly *Prayers*; for, besides the Oblations, Prayers were offered for them.

This,

This,  
Exam  
plicat  
all dep  
preser  
all M  
all the  
that t  
Kingd  
Isaac  
ὁ θεός  
θησαυρ  
τῆς δ' α  
τῆς δ'  
ὁ τῆ  
καὶ τῆ  
We h  
Latin  
ed M  
Rest  
Office  
Nor  
cient  
Hypo  
wher  
the S  
So  
thers  
may l  
less a  
not c  
only  
Chur  
15th  
whic



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 101

This, in my Opinion is beyond Contradiction; for Example, in the Liturgy of St. James, God is supplicated, That he would give Rest and Quiet to all departed in the right Faith, from Abel to that present Day: Remember, O Lord God, the Spirits of all Men, whom we remember and do not remember, all the Faithful from Abel the just to this present Day, that they may rest in the Land of the Living, in thy Kingdom, in Paradise, in the Bosom of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, our holy Fathers, &c. *μνησθητι, κύριε ὁ θεός, τῶν πνευμάτων καὶ πάσης σαρκός, ὧν ἐμνήσθημεν, καὶ ὧν οὐκ ἐμνήσθημεν, ὁρθοδόξων ἀπὸ Ἀβὼλ τῆς δικαίας, μέχρι τῆς σήμερον ἡμέρας, αὐτοὺς ἐκείνους ἀνάπαυσον ἐν χώρᾳ ζώντων, ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ σὺ, ἐν τῇ τρυφῇ τῆς παρθένου, ἐν τοῖς κόλποις Ἀβραάμ καὶ Ἰσαὰκ καὶ Ἰακώβ, τῶν ἁγίων πατέρων ἡμῶν, &c.* We have to the same Purpose in the other Greek and Latin Liturgies, collected by the Labour of learned Men: For the Dead they implored present Rest and future Light and Glory, and in all their Offices they directly referred to the Resurrection. Nor indeed was there any Practice in the ancient Church which did not exactly answer to our Hypothesis of the State of the Dead and of Hades, where they all expect the Coming of Christ, and the Sound of the last Trumpet.

So much concerning the Testimonies of the Fathers, taken either by themselves or together. It may be objected, That all upon that Head is fruitless and unnecessary, in as much as the *Papists* do not deny the Assent of the Fathers with us, and only overbear all down with the Authority of the Church, and that in no more early Age than the 15th Century, viz. The Council of Florence, in which it was decreed, That the Souls of the Saints were



## 102 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

were \* immediately taken into Heaven, and see the Lord in the Trinity as he is. It is with Grief we should see the universal Church involved in an Errour for Fourteen Centuries together, and be found at last in the Council of Florence, extorted by Fraud and Art from the poor half-witted Greeks.

† Let them dispute concerning this whom it most concerns: The Reformed have no Share therein, with whom this *Roman* Authority is of no Weight; we are at our perfect Freedom to go with the Stream of the sacred Scriptures, the Reason of Things, and the Customs of the most unaffected Ages of the Church, rather than the bare and absolute Definition of the Convention at Florence; we should therefore shake off the Foundation of all that Superstructure of the *Romish* pompous Culture of Saints, their Canonizations, Invocations, and the like; to which let me add their Images and Reliques. Upon this depend all their Pilgrimages, Vows, Masses for Saints, and the most prolifick Invention of Purgatory. And as upon this Thread the whole Weight of Superstition hangs, we shall not humour and indulge, by any Concession of ours, this Redundancy of Piety, when the Consequences are so great.

---

\* Mox recipi in coelum, & intueri clarè ipsum Dominum, trinum et unum, sicuti est. Conc. Florenti.

† All those most celebrated ancient Fathers, *Tertullian, Irenaeus, Origen, Chrysostom, Theodoret, Oecumenius, Theophylact, Ambrose, Clemens Romanus, St. Bernard*, have not agreed to this Decision of the Council of Florence, in which, after the most nice Enquiry, it has been defined, That the Souls of just Men, before the Day of Judgement, enjoy the Beatifick Vision; but, on the contrary, have been of an entirely different Opinion. Stapleton's *Defense of Church Authority*, L. 1, Ch. 2.

R E-

T  
think m  
a Copy  
ginal ab  
Mr. W  
ter I se  
tion to  
Copy,  
Translat  
the Do  
very lit  
making  
I ha  
junctio  
Those  
made o  
Person  
upon t  
As  
Friend  
Accide  
he is t  
my P  
mory  
with t  
I h  
fair pl  
ted fr  
our ve  
own c  
will b  
De Fia  
full Sa  
If t  
sweral  
credibi  
If  
ministr  
Mank  
with



## ADVERTISEMENT.

**T**Here having been a great Contest, concerning the Liberty I have taken of translating this Book, and my Reputation being closely attacked upon that Account, I think my self obliged to acquaint the World, that I neither stole a Copy, nor forged one; I had no Hand in pushing the Original abroad; and I am pretty well assured, it is Genuine, as Mr. *Wilkinson*, the *Overseer* of Dr. *Burnet's* Will, to the Letter I sent him upon that Subject, has returned no Declaration to the Contrary: If there is another more improved Copy, with the Doctor's Additions, it does not affect the *Translation*, nor my *Remarks*, because I have translated only the Doctor's *printed* Thoughts; his *private* Emendations, are very little to the Publick; and I have surely a Liberty of making *Remarks* upon a *printed* Book.

I have very little regard to my being threatned with an Injunction in *Chancery*, to prevent my answering Dr. *Burnet*. Those Times are over, and no Precedent I am sure will be made of that Nature; the *present Judge* of the *Court*, being a Person, of more Candour and Ingenuity, than to be feared upon that Head.

As the Book is published without my Fault, the Doctor's Friends have nothing to do, but to make the best of that Accident, if he has been guilty of Errours to let him drop; if he is to be defended to hire Auxiliaries for that Purpose. For my Part, I shall ever pay him the Respect, due to the Memory of a learned and polite Man, and use him as I would wish to be used my self, when dead.

I hope the World will be satisfied that I have given him fair play. And as to the insolent Charge of its being translated from a surreptitious Copy, we have the Confession of our very Adversaries, that it was collated with the Doctor's own original Emendations, by a learned Man. If the Reader will be pleased to peruse Mr. *Wilkinson's* Preface to his Book *De Fide & Officiis Christianorum*, lately published, he will receive full Satisfaction to this Point.

If that learned Man was not able to collate right, am I answerable for that, or will any impartial Person believe such *Incredibilities*?

If I have not treated Dr. *Burnet* much better than his *Administrators* have treated me, I leave to the general Sense of Mankind; for I have only answered him impartially, dealt with him coolly, and set him right for publick reading.

M. EARBERRY.







REMARKS.

Our Doctor in this *Appendix*, has heaped up Testimonies to vindicate *Prayers for the Dead*; and to shew some Defect in Judgement in this Particular, how great soever he may be in other Respects, he follows the Steps of certain *Neotericks* in quoting the *Apostolick Constitutions*, and some ancient Liturgies, whose Authority is of little weight with truly learned Men. I shall therefore think myself obliged to give an Account of those spurious Pieces, to baffle their Evidence, and to set them in a true light.

Mr. *Whiston* first insisted in these latter Days to revive their Authority, in order to vindicate some Notions of his own. He has been succeeded by another Body of Men whom I am obliged to treat with Tenderness, as being once my Brethren; and yet these Testimonies carry such evident Marks of Childishness and Folly, that it is no small Wonder to me they have any Advocates.

As to the *Apostolick Constitutions*, as they now subsist, they are upon a very slender Bottom as to Credibility and Authority; the Writer was wretchedly ignorant, the Chronology inconsistent, and the whole breathes neither the apostolick nor the primitive Spirit.

'Tis certain that several ancient Books, under fictitious Names, carry some Authority; such were the *Apostolick Canons*, though they were compiled long after the Apostles Days; they are still antient, and carry such Marks of Veracity with them, as plainly prove those Canons were a Collection of Apostolical Usages: But these *Constitutions* have no Credit in any respect.

For, in the first place, the present Copies do not agree with those in *Epiphanius's* Time; he mentions the *Constitutions* in his Account of the Heresy of the *Audiani*.

Εἰς τὴν αὐτὴν αὐτοὶ Ἀυδιανοὶ παρασέρουσι τὰς τῶν ἀποστόλων διατάξεις, ἵνα μὴ τοῖς πολλοῖς ἐν ἀμφιβόλῳ ἂν εἰ ἀδίκιον. These *Audiani* prefer the *Apostolick Constitutions*, which, though of uncertain Authority with many, are not entirely rejected.

If I may be allowed to give my Conjecture of these *Epiphanius's* *Constitutions*, they seem to be Traditions of the Apostles, collected by some private Hand, because no Notice is taken of their Author, nor are they so much as ascribed to *Clement* by *Epiphanius*, or any other Writers in those



those Ages. The first who fathered them upon *Clement* was the Person who found the Copy, from whose prolific Womb all the rest which now subsist derive their Existence; and even this Copy was found devoured with Rust and Time.

But what is of the utmost Weight, the present Constitutions thus found, differ very much from the Extract in *Epiphanius*, and therefore cannot be called the same; for in these there is evident strong Arianism, which could not be supposed in those applauded by *Epiphanius*, and by even *Athanasius* himself.

Moreover, the Suspicions in the finding this modern Copy, are so just and reasonable, that I wonder how any Man can fix or build upon so precarious a Foundation. When the Papists were put to a plunge to find out ancient Doctors to confirm their Faith, their constant Method has been to impose Pseudo-Fathers upon the World; such as *Papias*, *Hegeippus*, *Abdias Babylonicus*, the Decretal Epistles, and this *Clement*, who helps them out in several dead Lifts, besides Prayers for the Dead, as Transubstantiation, and the like. But what Divine of our Church, in any polemical Dispute, ever thought otherwise of these Testimonies, than as so many Forgeries; and Bishop *Fewel* frequently upbraids *Harding* for his Pseudo-*Clement* particularly.

The Constitutions had a long State of Oblivion before their Resurrection after their first Burial; several hundred Turns the Earth had made round the Sun, whilst they lay unregarded, and even in a manner unknown: At last *Marcus Capellius*, a *Venerian*, found them in an obscure Corner of *Crete*.

The late Bishop of *Worcester*, in a Letter to Mr. *Whiston*, printed by even Mr. *Whiston* in his Historical Preface, has made some very critical Strictures upon the Constitutions, and observes, that both *Bellarmin* and *Baronius* rejected them: To whom I may add *Bessaron*, who speaks so dubiously of them, as sufficiently declares his slender Opinion of their Authority; which may well be supposed, if we consider how unguarded are the Expressions, and how much they favour of modern Imposition.

This *Cretan* Copy was found in Greek Characters, so that a Question arises, Whether they were originally composed in Greek, or whether this Copy was a Translation only; and if a Translation, whether a faithful one or not? I pray of what Authority can the Translation of an unknown

known  
to, who  
Translati  
run, to  
ner, w  
*Epiphanius*  
fies there  
which r  
tions, a  
how can  
Copy?

Proofs th  
I kno  
ans, wh  
*Eusebius*  
which in  
l. 3. c.  
on him;  
*Appion*,  
lical Con  
had any  
St. *Cleme*  
Centuries  
*afflicis*, bu

In ord  
we must  
differs in  
several I  
whom I  
Authority  
suppose  
Constitut

To ret  
cil held  
in their  
position,  
Marks o

Thus  
Informati  
stand up  
are upon  
some few  
from any  
Precepts,



known Person be? What Corruptions may it not be liable to, where we are ignorant of the Age in which this Translation was made? Into what Absurdities must we run, to rely upon a Copy found after so suspicious a manner, when we have no Evidence except the Extract in *Epiphanius* of the antient Constitutions? And even he testifies there was a corrupt Copy of those Constitutions, into which the *Greeks* foisted some of their own peculiar Notions, and the Hereticks interpolated even them. If so, how can we tell which is the original Parent of the *Cretan* Copy? By what has been said, it appears what slender Proofs there are of the Genuineness and Authority of the same.

I know of no Evidence of antient ecclesiastical Historians, who mention the Constitutions as *Clement's* Writings: *Eusebius* gives us an Account of but one Epistle of *Clement*, which in his time was allowed to be genuine, *Ecl. Hist.* l. 3. c. 14. He tells us of supposititious Works fathered upon him; as of a second Epistle, Dialogues between *Peter* and *Appion*, l. 3. c. 38. But speak not one Word of the apostolical Constitutions: From whence I conclude, that if they had any Being in his time, they were not attributed to *St. Clement*. *St. Jerome*, who flourished in the 4th and 5th Centuries, mentions them in his Book *de Scriptorib. Ecclesiasticis*, but not as *Clement's* Writings.

In order to judge of the Genuineness of the *Cretan* Copy, we must make use of the Extract in *Epiphanius*, which differs in some Things from the other, as *Petavius* has given several Instances in his Notes upon that Author, and to whom I refer the Reader, which entirely detract from the Authority of the modern Constitutions; for it is rational to suppose *Epiphanius* would not wilfully have corrupted the Constitutions.

To return: The antient ones were condemned by a Council held at *Trullus* in *Constantinople*, we find no standing up in their defence, but they were condemned without Opposition, nor indeed could Writings with such evident Marks of Forgery, deserve any Tenderness.

Thus far I have thought fit to observe for the Reader's Information, that the very antient Constitutions did not stand upon any very good Bottom, and the modern ones are upon worse. I shall give the World a Specimen of some few very injudicious Flaws, that could never flow from any learned and judicious Collectors of Apostolical Precepts.



Τῶν ἰθνηκῶν βιβλίων πάντων ἀπέχου, lib. 1. c. 6. *Abstain from all Books of the Gentiles.* Could this be an Apostolical Precept or Custom, when in the very Epistles of St. Paul, Epimenides and Menander are quoted, for our Instruction in Morality? And Justin Martyr was not ashamed to corroborate the historical Truths of the Bible with the Testimonies of Heathen Authors, in that learned Treatise of his called *Cohortatio ad Gentes*; and we have the most notable Proof of the Descendants of Noah, from comparing Eratosthenes's Canon with the 11th of *Genesis*. Moreover, these Constitutions, by this Mark, could not be compiled all in the more ignorant Ages of Christianity, long after the Apologists and Fathers had so learnedly defended the Christian Religion by Weapons borrowed from the Heathen Mythologists, Philosophers, and Poets. As for the Compiler, he seems never to have read either sacred or profane History.

Nor is he much more learned or considerate in fathering upon the Apostles that vulgar Notion, that the Calf the Israelites worshipped, was the Egyptian God *Apis*.

Some will have them to be the Figures of the Cherubims; others assert they were not Gods, but Angels, because *Elohim* signifies both: Therefore, as when God says to Moses, *Ego mittam Angelum meum qui praeceat te*, I will send my Angel who shall go before thee: The Israelites knowing this Promise, and growing impatient at Moses's Absence, said to Aaron, *Fac nobis Elohim*, or *Angelos*, qui praecedant nos: Aaron made a Calf as that Angel which was to conduct them out of the Wilderness. This latter seems the most rational Account, as it clears Aaron of the Suspicion of Idolatry, and avoids the Absurdities flowing from the other Hypothesis.

The contrary Supposition, viz. of its being the Representation of the Egyptian God *Apis*, must be founded upon this Postulatum, That the Israelites during their servile Treatment by the Egyptians, had forgot their old Religion; which is neither agreeable to Scripture, Probability, nor Reason. But to return to our Pseudo-Clement.

He commands, lib. 2. c. 1. that no Bishop shall be under fifty Years of Age, except in a very small Dioecese, where an old Man fit for that Office could not be had.

Not to mention what a Dioecese that must be, where the young are wiser than the old, I shall give an Instance wide enough from Clement's Exception, and that is *Damas* of *Magnesia*, whom Ignatius in his Epistle to the *Magnesian*, commands

of  
command  
*Magnesia*  
fied for  
fore, cou  
. Moreo  
Kings;  
many Ag  
Pretences  
than taug  
Nor is  
the Ter  
says the  
a King,  
and with  
House, w  
All whic  
Jews.

Nor d  
ans to fr  
their Fe  
Days fill  
Forum v  
whose v  
From wh  
by some  
tive Tim  
of those

He re  
Janitors,  
And thou  
tullian an  
ders, exc  
Ignatius,  
posture o  
Zouas Te  
I salute th  
Lord Jesu  
unmarried  
least in  
of Widow  
Years of  
gins at th  
Age as fi  
be admitt



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 107

commands them not to disrespect for his Youth. I suppose *Magnesia* was a Metropolis, and did not want Men qualified for that sacred Office every way: this Precept, therefore, could not be an apostolical one.

Moreover, *lib. 2. c. 11.* he orders Bishops to preside over Kings; a spiritual Tumefaction, that never appeared till many Ages after the Apostles Times. These are the fond Pretences of a luxuriant and ambitious Church, better fed than taught.

Nor is he more conversant in the Scripture, in calling the Teraphim an Abomination, when the Prophet *Hosea* says the Children of *Israel* shall live many Days without a King, and without a Prince, and without an Ephod, and without a Teraphim; and Teraphims were in *David's* House, when his Wife made up one to preserve his Life. All which shews how common they were amongst the *Jews*.

Nor does he want Preciseness in forbidding the Christians to frequent the Fairs of the *Gentiles*, their Theatres and their Feasts; whereas *Tertullian* says, the Christians in his Days fill'd every thing except the Heathen Temples. Their Forum was not exempt from Multitudes of Christians, whose very Departure alone would confound the Empire. From whence I conclude, these Constitutions were framed by some illiterate Fellows, who lived long after the primitive Times, and was least conversant in even the Writings of those Ages.

He recounts the inferiour Orders of Readers, Cantors, Janitors, who owe their Origin to late Ages of the Church: And though Sub-deacons and Readers are mentioned by *Tertullian* and *St. Cyprian*, there are no Footsteps of other Orders, except a forged Epistle to the *Antiochians*, ascribed to *Ignatius*, which carries the most evident Marks of an Imposture on its Forehead; as particularly when it says, ἀσπάζομαι τὰς χριστολόγους παρθένους ἃς ὀνόμαζον ἐν Κυρίῳ Ἰησοῦ, *I salute the Virgins professing Christ, whom I have brought up in the Lord Jesus*; whereas there was no Dedication of Virgins to an unmarried Life ever used by the primitive Christians, at least in the time of *Ignatius*. There was indeed a College of Widows, into which Virgins were admitted after sixty Years of Age; but there was no College for young Virgins at that time, but those who had lived to so great an Age as sixty Years without Defilement, were judged fit to be admitted into the College of Widows, there being no danger



danger of Scandal at that Age. More may be seen on this head in Mr. *Dodwell's* Additions to Bishop *Pearson's* Chronology, *Dis.* 2. c. 6. I conclude, these inferiour Orders being mentioned, are Marks of more recent Ages than the Constitutions pretend; whose Author thinks himself very cunning in giving Directions about the Christians condemned to the Mines; whereas he is either too early or too late even there.

Nor is he more judicious in relating the superstitious Fable of *Simon Magus's* Fall, *l.* 2. c. 14. a Story of late date, and encouraged by none but credulous Men who were qualified to read, for *Semoni Deo Sango, Simoni Deo Sancto, Eusebius* is the only credible Author given out as the Relator of this Story, *Eccl. Hist.* *l.* 2. c. 14. but he mentions no Fall. He owns that *Simon Magus* came to Rome, and that Divine Providence directed *Peter* thither at the same time, who baffled his Designs. It's strange that *Eusebius*, who was accurate enough in telling formal Stories (whoever he had them from) should leave out all the Circumstances of *Peter's* Victory; or that *Nero* should be awed by so signal a Miracle into some Sense of Religion. Moreover, the Story does not tell well in this *Clementine* Relation; that *Peter* out of pity would not break his Neck, but only left him to die with the Bruises.

A vile Comparison, both *Petavius* and Bishop *Usher* take notice of, not improper to be here inserted. 'A Bishop, (says he) *Ap. Con.* lib. 2. c. 26. is like God the Father, a Deacon like the Son, and a Deaconess like the Holy Ghost: In like manner, the Holy Ghost can do nothing of itself, and a Deaconess can do nothing without a Deacon.' Is not this admirable Stuff for supporting the Authority of praying for the Dead!

The Council in which these Constitutions were pretended to be made, is said to be in the Year 64, when *James the Just* was alive, though *Eusebius's* *Chronicon* tells us his Brains were beat out a Year before. Nay, our Author ventures to set a particular Mark upon *Basilides, Cleobius, Carpocrates*, when *Hegeſippus* testifies that they did not begin to propagate their Heresies till *Cleophas* the Successor of *James* was chosen, See *Euseb. Eccl. Hist.* *l.* 4. c. 21.

Thus much I have observed concerning the Apostolick Constitutions. I shall next proceed to the famous Liturgies that are now trumped up, and played upon the established one of the Church of England.

It's

of  
It's  
ject the  
their A  
with a  
The lear  
Some pla  
raife him  
one half  
had any  
what P  
who ha  
mories?  
That  
and driv  
Refuge,  
that he  
fix Cen  
very hi  
were as  
Things  
were fo  
first M  
may fee  
were o  
the Cat  
More  
have s  
he ma  
made,  
*John's*  
*Domitia*  
Reign  
out. S  
Mor  
Epistle  
after J  
from I  
He  
by his  
Saints  
Chap.  
In  
much  
they v



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 169

It's certain the Cool, the Judicious, and the Learned reject these pretended antient Liturgies as spurious; yet their Authority, without any new Light, is advanced with a Flourish. To begin with *Dionysius* the Areopagite: The learned Dr. *Cave*, in his *Historia Rei Literariae*, observes, some place him even so low as the sixth Century, and others raise him up to the Time of *Eusebius* of *Cæsarea*, which is one half more early: Nor do I believe Dr. *Burnet* himself had any notion of his being the Apostolical *Dionysius*. To what Purpose then does he mention an Impostor, a Man who had no Compassion for the Dead, nor for their Memories?

That *Dallaus* has overthrown his Apostolical Character, and driven him down the Stream a great way from that Refuge, is evident enough: And his negative Arguments, that he was not mentioned within the compass of the first six Centuries, if not absolutely conclusive, amount to a very high Probability against him. Moreover, his Notions were as unheard of as his Writings; as were many of the Things he relates of the utmost Consequence if true, yet were founded upon no Authority except his own. The first Mention of his Works, was about the Year 532, as we may see in *Dallaus de Script. Dionys. c. 7.* and then his Works were objected by the *Severian* Hereticks, and rejected by the Catholics as supposititious.

Moreover, he had the common Fate with all Lyars, to have short Memories and treacherous Observations: For he makes a Canon of Scripture before there was one made, and he very formally quotes several Texts in St. *John's* Gospel before it was writ; for he suffered under *Domitian*, and St. *John* did not write his Gospel before the Reign of *Trajan*, when the *Cerinthian* Heresy was breaking out. See Chap. 16.

Moreover, he quotes another Saying of *Ignatius* in his Epistle to the *Romans*, which Epistle was wrote ten Years after *Dionysius* was dead; an unhappy Blunder, proceeding from Ignorance and a very injudicious Haste. See Ch. 17.

He writes to *Timotheus* as alive, when the very Epistles by him cited, prove that *Timothy* was dead, with other Saints who departed this Life, and were with God. See Chap. 18.

In many Places he calls *Timothy* his Son, just with as much Propriety as I should call Dr. *Grabe* and Dr. *Hicks*, if they were alive, my Children. This is an insupportable



Insolence and Contradiction, fitted only to the Taste of an Impostor. See Chap. 19, 20.

In another Place he says, that Infant-Baptism was founded upon an antient Tradition; a certain Argument he was much after the Apostles Times, See Chap. 21.

Several other Instances, too many here to insist upon, *Dallus* brings, which shew the recent Smell of Novelty, and betray their spurious Pretensions to Antiquity; I shall next treat concerning the celebrated Liturgies.

The Liturgy of St. James, is full of modern Expressions, as Dr. Cave observes, as *Θυμίαμα, θυσίας ἱερῶν, θυσίας ἱερῶν, πύλαι, τρισάγιον, Hymnus Cherubicus, θιοόχος, ὁμοῦσιος, Temple, Monasteries, Confessors*, and the like; all which were technical words of later Centuries. Let me add the Appellations of the blessed Virgin, and Invocation, have all a modern Turn: *χαῖς κεχαρισμένη Μαρία, Hail Mary, full of Grace, &c.* and the Epithet *αἰὲς παρθένος Μαρία, semper Virginis Maria*, all refer to the Disputes of the later Ages.

This Liturgy was never mentioned before the Sixth Century; from whence it is evident it could not belong to St. James, whose Name they assume.

The Rest are upon the same Lay, all rejected by learned Men, not tinged by Prejudice; whereas, we have no authentick Manuscripts of any Liturgies, that I know of, before the Year 800, if I remember right, and those were Times of no authority with unbiassed Men, as to the particular Point of Praying for the Dead.

It's surprizing indeed, that we have none more antient, preserved by some means or other; and that all the antient ones of both the *Greek* and *Latin* Church should be lost.

The Phanaticks have triumphed in this Chasm over Liturgies in general; and the Papists have got no little Ground by having all that are to be found on their Side.— But what is all this to Dr. *Burnet*, not bigotted even to the Scripture itself? His nice Taste can never digest the unpalatable Barbarisms and Superstitions of these Liturgies, for Languages may be known as well as Medals; no Age can counterfeit *Cicero*, nor *St. Paul*, nor *St. John*, no more than counterfeit Medals can be imposed for those Times upon us. There is a Genius for every Age, as well as for particular Persons.

This the Doctor could not but know. Truth has always one uniform Method of vindicating itself; a plain open Way; while Error dances over every miry Bog and treacherous



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. III

cherous Ground, its own natural Levity supports it; it has no Tendency to the Bottom, it affects only the Superficies of Things.

### CHAP. IV.

*Concerning the natural State of Souls, during the Interval of Death and the Resurrection. Whether they are naked, and separated from all Manner of corporeal Substance; or are united to an Aerial one, or to some other.*

HAVING finished our first Question concerning the Manner of the intermediate State, and its Relation to Happiness or Misery, and to the moral State of Souls before the Resurrection; we come now to the more perplexed one, concerning their natural Situation in that Place.

That Souls survive, live, and think after Death, and the Dissolution of the Body, has been before proved \*. But as the Apostle says of his Extasy, *Whether in the Body, or out of the Body, I cannot tell; God knoweth*: So I may say, That whether out of this Body the Soul assumes a new one, or remains naked, or without any Body to the Resurrection of the Dead, I cannot tell, God only knows. These are certainly ranked with the Obscurities never shone upon by Divine Revelation, nor illuminated by the Light of Nature; and as we can make no Experiments here, we must derive our Knowledge

---

\* V. Dallæus de poenis l. 2. c. 12. p. 181. Gerard de Luxoray. Tom. viii. p. 419. & de statu Animarum separatarum, p. 403.

from



## 112 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

from the innate Seeds of Truth, from the Nature of the Thing itself, or from the sacred Scriptures. As to the first, the Interpreters and Judges are the Philosophers; and for the latter, the Fathers of the Christian Church. But I cannot find from any of these, the least Certainty to depend upon. As to the Helps from Reason, they are very feeble in this Case: For as the Union of our Souls with our Bodies, proceeds not from any natural Cause, or Necessity, but from the Will of God, and his divine Decree; upon the Dissolution of this Union, it depends upon the same Will of God, or what is the same, from some unknown Laws of Nature, what Manner of Union it shall undergo, or whether it shall remain in an independent State from all Matter, as it is a Self-subsisting Substance in itself.

The Philosophers are silent in this Matter, as to the most part. Some of the *Platonicks* make the Soul, after its Departure from this Body, assume an Aerial one first, and after that an Æthereal one, as it increases in the Progress of Virtue and Wisdom; in a retrograde Order to which it is crouded down in this lowermost Seat.

This Opinion labours not so much under the Weight of Absurdity, as the Want of Proofs. How does it appear we have shaken off our aerial Body when we are born; and that we shall go through all those Degrees, or that there is no Interval, or State of absolute Vacuity from Body? And as there are innumerable Worlds within the Compass of the Universe; the Orders, Methods, and Degrees prescribed by the infinite Wisdom of God, are, or may be as various; and what are for us to go through, belong to his secret Wisdom, in whose depths these Mysteries are concealed.

But,



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 113

But, perhaps you will say, That Shades and Apparitions of the Dead prove this Assumption of Aerial and visible Forms, as they appear to us. For my part, I can never believe any Appearances of the Souls of the Dead before the Day of Judgement. Perhaps, Spirits and Dæmons, may have Power to compress the Air, and turn it into Vehicles for human or brutal Forms; and this Power they do exercise at this day amongst barbarous Nations. Though how numerous soever the Stories are with us, I am not apt to believe one in six hundred true. They are however the Food of the Vulgar, and by such Food their Faith is confirmed, and the Representation of a future State revived. The Monks brought into the World a plentiful Harvest of these Lyes and Fictions, to sustain the Notion of their Purgatory.\*

Let us for once suppose, that these Dead have Aerial Bodies, and animal Life; several Doubts arise concerning what Region of the Air they inhabit; whether these Strangers take up their Seats in the inferiour or superiour Region of the Air. If they are below, they are obnoxious to Tempests, and the Inclemencies of the most rigorous Seasons, not covered by Houses, or harboured from the same: Their tender Bodies to be wafted by Winds, driven by Meteors to different Regions, and new Habitations, and to be exposed to the fury of Snow, Hail, or Rain. And if we give them the clear æthereal Sky above the Atmosphere and Clouds; these Regions are too serene, too bright and pleasant

---

\* See *Chrys. Hom. 29. Hom. 1. First, Concerning Lazarus Maldonat. upon Luc. xvi. at the end he quotes Tertullian de Anima*, but he is mistaken, for he does not quote the Chapter he cites; likewise *Asbanasius*, or whoever was the Author of that to *Antiochus. 9. 11. 13. Isidor. lib. 8. Etym. 6. 9. and Theoph. upon Mat. 8.*



#### 114. *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

for the Shades of impure and wicked Souls; for there is no Separation of these from the Good, before the great Judgement-day. Thus much concerning the Seats of the Dead.

*Secondly*, Concerning the Polity of the Dead; If they have Bodies, and animal Life, they must have some political Government; either one common and promiscuous Form, or they are distinguished into Nations, different as to Morals and Manners, as they are distinguished here. The *French*, for Example, have their Limits; and the *Spaniards*, *Italians*, *Germans*, and *Britons* theirs in the Air, separated from each other. They have all their own Country, their own Manners, and their own Religion. These Things therefore must be enquired into; but still the Difficulty remains to fix these Bounds and Divisions in the yielding Air, without Ditches, Rivers, or determined Marks. Neither are the Difficulties less concerning their Kings, from what antient Stock shall they take their hereditary Monarch; or if they lay that aside, whom shall they elect. We see here the Seeds of Discord, if not of War arise; but how their Victories will go, I cannot tell; for Blood, Death and Wounds belong least to the share of those Beings, if I conjecture right.

Concerning their Language and Speech indeed, some Questions may arise. We have known Dialogues ascribed to the Dead, but with what Tongue they speak, is beyond our power to tell. Perhaps you say, they use their Mother Tongue with which they died.

The *Greeks* carry their own native Language into the other World, and the *Latins* theirs, and so do the rest; sometimes People and Languages have their perpetual Flux from Age to Age. The present



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 115

present *Romans* are entirely ignorant of the antient *Latin* Tongue, and the common People of *Italy*, know no more; what Communication then will the Moderns have with *Romulus* or *Numa*? They who inhabit the *Western* and *Northern* Parts of the Globe, understand not the antient *Celtick* and *Scythian* Tongues. Moreover, what shall we say to ourselves, the Inhabitants of this Island, who have so many different Fountains and Springs of Speech? Shall we speak the antient *British*, *Saxon*, or *Norman* in that aerial World, pure and uncorrupt, or mixed as they now are? What *Babel* Confusion of Languages must this bring into this future State.

In this Life we are born Infants, and by degrees arrive at the Use of Speech, by the Instruction of our Nurses and Masters; but in that Life there are no Stages of Infancy; we arrive there full adult, without the distinction of Ages: They do not come from their Mother's Womb, and creep by degrees, like Children, to their full growth, but they immediately take in the æthereal Food; they have Reason and Speech, without the Fatigue of learning Letters. I say, this must be the Case, according to that Hypothesis; for my part, I cannot conceive how they retain the Memory of their antient Language, or imbibe a new one at one draught. But of this enough.

As to their Religion, the Difficulty is greater still: These Spirits must have some Divine Worship, or Form of Religion; must they therefore transfer to the other World their Errours in this? Shall the *Jews* follow the Law of *Moses*, the *Mahometans* their Impostor, the *Pagans* their Gods, and the *Christians* their Christ? If so, let the \* *Papists* have their Pope,

---

\* This would be a great Grievance, and



## 116 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

and the Reformed their own Rule of Faith, the Sacred Scriptures; but what Scriptures, what Letters can they have in those aerial Regions, or what written Law or Canon, can make a lasting impression upon that fluid Substance? Moreover, if the Souls of the Dead, from the Beginning of the World to this present Day, inhabit in common the Region of the Air; the *Jews* will there find their antient Prophets, and the Christians their Apostles, from whence they will have all the Opportunities of Conversion, by Instruction from the sacred Oracles, the Prophets, concerning the *Messias*; and the Christians, from the Mouths of the Apostle, will have an absolute Decision of all the Matters in dispute with the Papists and the Reformed; from whence we shall have the universal Restitution of the *Jews*, and the Union of Christians.

O blessed Seats! how in Happiness have the Dead outstriped the Living, when all Mankind after they have heard of one God, and the Mystery of the *Messias* clearly explained by these divine Beings, rejecting their Errours, shall be converted to the Truth of the Christian Religion. This surely is the most glorious Kingdom of Christ, not upon Earth, nor in Heaven, but his Kingdom of the Dead in the Air. But these Things do not square with the Christian Dispensation, and are moreover contrary to our Faith: For, who can believe that *Adam* and *Eve*, and their Posterity, Sons and Daughters, have lived so many thousand Years in the Air? Do they retain the Knowledge of their Families and Relations, or do they regard what is done below by their Fellow-Creatures? I am weary with making Enquiries into these dubious and uncertain Affairs, and if we form any other Scheme, it will be equally doubtful; so I say, there can be no Possibility

lity  
terna  
Th  
gume  
itself  
the B  
we sh  
aerial  
Sorts  
The  
mised  
the fi  
rinbi  
distin  
two,  
born  
mage  
inter  
the f  
earth  
a Bu  
nal i  
real  
pose  
we g  
Hou  
\*  
we  
in a  
rais  
it m  
ner  
ing

\*  
Plac



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 117

lity amongst the Dead; I mean, there can be no External, Corporeal, Animal, or Visible State.

Thus far we have proceeded with rational Arguments, deduced from the Nature of the Thing itself: If we consult the Holy Scriptures, as to the Bodies of these Dead before the Resurrection, we shall find them not favourable to this intermediate aerial State; they take notice of no more than two Sorts of Bodies, or Terrestrial and Celestial ones. The first in our possession here, and the last promised to us at the Resurrection of the Dead. In the fifteenth Chapter of the first Epistle to the Corinthians, the Apostle St. Paul enlarges upon this distinction of two different Bodies, and no more than two, as appropriated to our Souls; and as we have *born the Image of the Earthly*, we shall also bear the *Image of the Heavenly*. Here is no Mention of the intermediate Body. He is more plain in the fifth of the second to the Corinthians; *For we know, that if our earthly House of this Tabernacle were dissolved, we have a Building of God, an House not made with Hands, eternal in the Heavens*. Here is nothing of any corporeal State between; so far from that, it is supposed to be a State of perfect Nudity; *For in this we groan earnestly, desiring to be clothed upon, with our House which is from Heaven*.

\* We shall be found clothed, not naked; for if we are to have any Body, we cannot be said to be in a State of Separation, when Christ shall come to raise the Dead; for if the Soul or Mind is naked, it means the same as being separated from all manner of Body, which is certainly in opposition to being clothed, or endued with one. Moreover, the

---

\* Concerning the Word *Superindui*, see *Cröllius* upon the Place, p. 315.



## 118 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

Fate of every Man depends upon his Works in this Life; from thence he has his irreversible Doom. As Ecclesiastes says, *If a Tree fall toward the South, or toward the North, in the Place where the Tree falleth, there it shall be*, Eccles. xi. 3. This certainly refers to the Death of Man, and to the Immutability of his State; and this likewise was meant in our blessed Saviour's Parables, by the Door being shut, and the Apostle Paul plainly teaches the same: *For we must all appear before the Judgement-Seat of Christ; that every one may receive the Things done in his Body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad* \*. These Actions conclude the Fate of the Man, according to his Transactions in this Life. But if a new mortal Life was to intervene before the Judgement, capable of the Imputation of Good and Evil, Vice and Virtue, lengthened out into a Series of many Ages; I cannot see how this short incommodious Life, can bear any Proportion as to Eternity, and a future State, with that long State of Duration independant thereof.

Thirdly, According to the common Phrase of Scripture, Death is called a Sleep, and the Dead are said to sleep; which plainly hints at Death being a State of quiet Silence and Inactivity; I mean as to the external World, with which we have no Commerce in that State of Death, more than in a State of Sleep: we are therefore said to arise and be awakened at the Resurrection, because the Change is a Kind of shaking off sleep, and is a Resurrection to Light, and to a visible World.

You will say, perhaps, that this Scripture-Phrase respects rather the Body, which lies as it were in a

\* Mat. xxv. 10. Luke xiii. 25. 2 Cor. v. 10.



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 119

pleasant Sleep: It may be so, but it is much stronger, and to the purpose, if we join the Soul with the Body, which as in a Sleep, rests from all its usual Actions, and is free from external Objects. For the Senses are bound as in Sleep, and, as in an Extasy, we are abstracted from the corporeal World; and when that opens to our view, we are said to arise and be awake. Whereas, if after our Departure, we assume more active and sprightly Bodies, and our Souls bask and play in their æthereal Fields, they cannot be said to sleep, and to arise from Sleep before the Resurrection; and if we apply these Expressions to the Carcass only, it will hardly bear.

We must observe, that when we attribute Inactivity to the Souls of the Dead, it must not be taken in an universal and absolute Sense, but only that they are freed from an external Activity, and from any Communication with the external World; but still they have Life, Consciousness and Thought, in the same manner as before: so I understand the Words of Christ, who in order to prove the Immortality of the Soul, says, *That God was the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob; for he is not the God of the Dead, but of the Living*: For all live unto him. By the Dead, Christ means, all those that are deprived of Life, and in this sense he denies the Patriarchs to be dead: They all, says he, live in God; that is, if I understand right, if they do not live in respect of Men, and of the visible World, yet in regard to God, the invisible World, and their intellectual Faculties, they live and flourish.

This is sufficient from the sacred Scriptures, to find our State of Life we are to enjoy before the Resurrection, whether it is Corporeal or not; whether we shall know the Sun, the Stars, or see the



## 120 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

Light of this visible World before the Resurrection: Whereas, according to our Philosophy, unless the Soul be united to the Body, or has a vital Union with some Portion of Matter, it can have no Sense or Perception of the external World, or of any corporeal Phenomenon, or material Motion. This may seem a Paradox to some, who imagine the Soul may perceive and take the Impression of external Actions without that Union, naked and free from Matter, in the same manner as though it had a real proper Body; but how can this be, unless the Soul is impenetrable? for Bodies act only by Motion, Contact and Impulse, and without Resistance there is no Pressure; moreover, corporeal Motions produce no cogitative Sensations by any proper Effects of their own, neither can they act upon an incorporeal Nature; but by a Law constituted by the Author of Nature, they sympathetically act upon each other. Nevertheless there is a great Difference between the Action caused by this vital Union, and the bare Presence of Matter: I should see with my Eyes shut, if the bare Presence or Vicinity of an Object could excite that Sense in the Soul. Unless a Sympathy connects the whole mundane System, and by that Communication receives sensible Impressions from these Objects.

Moreover, to conclude, Pleasure and Pain, the primary Sensations, and of the greatest moment, cannot be in the Soul, without a corporeal Union; for they are Affections arising from some good or evil Action upon the Body. If you strike a Wall with your Stick, I see the Motion of the Stick, and hear the Sound of the Blow, without the Affection of Grief; but if with the same force you strike any Part of my Body, I feel a different Sensation from the Sound, or from my Sight, a new Affection, called



called Pain. If with a Sword, or Ax, I cut off the Arm of a Tree, no Pain arises, unless I inflict the same Action upon myself; and even the least Prick of the Finger with a Needle, affects the Spirits more than the greatest Bomb, or the loudest Cannon upon another Body. From hence it is evident, no corporeal Presence or Vicinity can give us those Sensations without an immediate Union, or Sympathy, to communicate the Impressions of Matter.

I have proceeded as far in my Enquiries into the State of the Dead, as the Light from Scripture, and the Reason of Things will bear; from whence it appears, First, That Souls do remain after the Extinction of the Body. Secondly, That the Good and Bad pass their Times either well or ill, according to their Actions. Thirdly, That neither one or other have their Completion of Happiness and Misery before the Day of Judgement. Lastly, It is rather probable that Souls are in a separate and unclothed State till the Resurrection. These are

---

\* To conclude; the Dead know nothing of the State of the Living, and are freed from the Incumbrance of domestick Cares, and rest from their Labours, *Job* xiv. 16. *Job* xiv. 20, 21. I cannot conceive, for instance, that an old Woman, who can neither write nor read, or know one Letter of the Alphabet, and much less can understand Statuary and Painting, at once upon being divested of her Body, shall form to her Fancy an Image exactly agreeable to herself, with all the Linaments of her Face, and her outward Appearance, even to exactness of Habit, with greater nicety than *Apelles* could paint, or *Phidias* carve. These things are to us unaccountably strange; but as the Powers and Faculties of the Soul divested of its first Body, and invested with a pure and æthereal one, are to us unknown, these things are above the power of human Demonstration;



amongst the obscure and unrevealed Mysteries; concerning which, let us proceed \*.

### REMARKS.

This Chapter contains a large Field for Schemes and Conjectures, and I think our Doctor has neither discovered much himself, nor suffered others to find out more. I cannot applaud him for Justice he has done to any; and a Man might have expected a little more Pains upon some Topicks. Concerning Apparitions he is very tender: I cannot persuade myself, *says he*, the Souls of the Dead appear before the Day of Judgement; the Devil, *he says*, has a Power of making Appearances for the Convenience of barbarous Nations, or those very nigh Barbarity. I cannot very well understand what he means by this; he makes all we take for Apparitions to be the Effects of Demoniack Arts calculated for Brutes and Fools, and consequently they serve for no good or virtuous Purpose, and will not bear the Glitterings of an illuminated Age. They fly from Philosophers: and no Devil would pretend to put a Trick upon the Doctor.

But if Spirits appear only in a barbarous Age, we have scope enough for Apparitions; for I have made this Observation, Party Distinctions have barbarized more than half our Nation; and the Devil has Scope enough to mock, delude, and terrify his Votaries, if that be the Case.

Is it dissonant from Reason, that the Souls should come from *Hades* into this World, for some particular Ends of Providence? And why should the Devil only have a share in dressing up sham Spirits? The Notion of Apparitions may be laughed at, and ridiculed; yet we find no Scripture that contradicts this Return from *Hades*; nor do I know

\* It becomes a Christian and a Philosopher to confess his Ignorance: If there is besides the Body another Vehicle in which the Soul flies away in the Article of Death, I am not averse to the Hypothesis; but in Philosophy we must go according to the Proofs before us; and so much shall serve for this Head.



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 123

more than one Reason against that Notion; and it's a Reason every Body will not come into.

God seems purposely to have concealed the State of the Dead from us in the Scriptures; and to have drawn a Curtain betwixt them and us; and therefore it is not probable he should allow that free Correspondence of Spirits going backwards and forwards upon Earths.

For my part, the Frequency of these things I do not believe. For though there is not a Family in England without a Spirit, if we believe idle Tales, nor a Green over which they do not trip, nor a Church-yard in which they do not walk; I can come into the Doctor's Calculation, and cut off 599 from 600. Nevertheless, some have undeniable Evidence; but even those never tell Tales of the Place from whence they come, and make no Discoveries to contradict the Intention of God, or to draw the Curtain back.

Religion wants Supports of different Kinds, for the different Sorts of People it has to deal with; therefore God has corroborated Natural Religion with Revelation, and to corroborate the latter with such Appearances, and even Miracles, contradicts no common Sense; and it is certain, the Notion of Apparitions will work with some to prove a future State more than distant Revelation can do.

But God is sparing in affording such Nocturnal Lights, and his Pleasure ought to be a Law to us; though for my part I should not be at all sorry, if more appeared, to frighten some I know, every day.

Whether *Samuel* was really raised by the Witch of *Endor*, is a Question agitated to and fro by learned Men. Yet I know no Reason why God might not concur to bring *Samuel* from *Hades*, as he concurred with *Balaam*, who was a wicked Man, and made him his Instrument to utter Divine Revelation, without any Virtue inherent in the false Prophet. As God has an indisputable Sovereignty over all his Creatures, I am not apt to think *Jeroboam*, *Omri*, or *Jehu*, were Creatures of his Favour, though they were Creatures of his Power; as all wicked Men are, when they are advanced to punish a Nation or Family.

I confess I have strong Prejudices against the common Notion, that *Samuel* did not appear to *Saul*. For, First, I am fully persuaded there is nothing really in Witchcraft itself, and that the Woman was a Cheat; but suspecting *Saul*, and knowing his Power, might be obliged to go through the Ceremony, for fear of Death; or she might fancy her-



## 114 Of the STATE of the DEAD

self a Witch, as many have done since, labouring with a Frenzy, or Melancholy, or some depraved Disposition of the Body. As to the first, this accounts for her crying out when she saw *Samuel* really arise, and acknowledging *Saul*; for when the Fact was really done, she was out of danger of her Life, she was startled at the Appearance, from whence it was no familiar Devil, or usual Trick. It is the Opinion of some (see *Pool's Synops. Critic.* upon the Place) That, he did not appear regularly, but unexpectedly, soon, before the Necromantick Verses were over, or that he appeared in a different Form from other Apparitions of Spirits; but this I can by no means agree to, because it supposes Witches to have more Power than they really have: it is more probable she was surprized to see the Success of her Imaginary Art.

If she was no Cheat, but only a fasciful Witch, she might be equally under a Surprise when she saw the Prophet make his Appearance there.

But if we allow her really to practise her Trade, we must consider what we do, and the Consequences of letting the Devil loose in that manner, and giving him an illimited Range over the World; whereas I cannot believe that he can appear otherwise than by Commission; and when he is sent: He is not to work against Mankind in that strong Manner: And as God has made even the Appearances of good Spirits so very rare, we cannot imagine the Devil has a Power to send out his Legions of Appearances at his pleasure. Whereas Apparitions are very rare in this habitable World: Flesh and Blood cannot bear them; and if we grant there are some, the most we can say of them, is, they are irregular and uncommon. Therefore the Saints in the late Rebellion did not consider what Wound they gave to the Wisdom and Goodness of God, in coming into these Notions of Witchcraft; our Laws are calculated against the imaginary Practice thereof, which is often of most dismal Consequence, because it lets loose the Imagination to prey upon the human Body, and oftentimes to destroy the Fabrick thereof.

I conclude, the Witch of *Endor* could be no real Witch, and consequently by her own Power could raise neither Prophet or Devils; and therefore without any Prejudice to Reason, or Divine Revelation, *Samuel* might really appear. Some of the Fathers, as *Pool* observes, (to whom for ease I refer the Reader) particularly *Origen* and *Justin Martyr*, believed



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 125

believed *Samuel* was raised really from his long Sleep, by Incantations, as though the Devil or Witches could call the Souls of the Righteous out of *Hades*. The Author of *Ecclesiasticus* was a wise Man, and lived long before the Fathers; and his Opinion in this Case is preferable to theirs. In his 46th Chapter, he gives us an Epitome of *Samuel's* Life, and with the same Thread of History he carries the Reader to his Appearance after Death: And after his Death he prophesied and shewed the King his End, and lift up his Voice from the Earth in Prophecy, to blot out the Wickedness of the People. Here is no Room for Evasion, he arose, he prophesied, and told the King his End.

As to the Devil's Knowledge, I will grant, though I may be mistaken, that he is finished as to all the Parts of Knowledge, and that he is even a strong Conjecturer, being furnished with Materials, much above the Capacity of us Mortals. But to grant him Prescience, an incommunicable Attribute of God, is more than can, without Impiety, be granted. This is setting up *Marcion's* Heresy, and making two Sovereigns of the Universe.

As to the Heathen Oracles, I am very much of *Vandale's* Opinion, that they were the Mysteries of the Priestcraft of those Ages; and if they sometimes delivered Truths, it was in the same manner *Balaam* prophesied, beyond his own Intention and his Skill: For to allow that diabolical Communication with the World, is to give the Devil a Power to confirm his false Religion, by Means equivalent to a Miracle; for to establish his Presence, is a very near Step towards establishing his Power, especially in Countries where no other in the same strong manner appeared.

Upon the whole, it is evident what Contradictions, what Heresies flow from not allowing the Appearance of *Samuel* to be real: we cannot imagine that God concurred to raise an imaginary Form, that will by no means bear, or square with his Honour.

Says *Samuel*, *Why hast thou disquieted me?* v. 15. I desire to know what great Interruption it could be of Happiness to an evil, or to a fictitious Spirit to be there. *Samuel* might well complain, to be raised from a long and sweet Sleep, in hopes of a glorious Resurrection; and to be sent upon an Errand, disagreeable to his Nature, to damp the Spirits of an unhappy Monarch, weighed down by Misfortunes, before, and bending under the Curse of God. For I cannot think that Spirits divested of Flesh and Blood, are divested of



## 126 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

of Humanity at the same time; because I rather believe, Flesh and Blood is oftener an Enemy to Humanity, than a Friend thereto.

Moreover, the Stile of the Prophecy, and the commanding Force it carries with it, shew a Spirit above an evil one. The Devil would not send them to tell Truth, nor to enforce Obedience to God; nor would God send them to lye; whereas he expressly, v. 19. asserts, he was the *Samuel* by whom the Lord spoke before.

Let me, as a concluding Argument, add, how much it falls beneath the Credit and Dignity of the Scriptures, to tell a Story in this categorical Manner of a fictitious conjuring Relation, and to make Spirits assume Characters we in many Ages since, find so much difficulty to strip them of. I am sorry so many learned Men have followed Criticisms, instead of weighing the Consequences of their Notions; though I cannot think it was a very weighty Objection, that good Spirits come out of the Air. Whereas *Samuel* arose from the Ground, because he might come from the Antipodes of *Palesine*, and take the Earth as the shortest way.

If any learned Man will take this Argument up concerning *Samuel*, and convince me, that the fictitious Prophet was only there, I shall not take it ill from his hands; but it is a Story of so much consequence, to vindicate the Honour of God, and to establish the Appearance of Apparitions, I shall not easily part with it.

If it is not absurd, nor contrary to Fact and Reason, to bring Spirits from their blest Abodes in Heaven, and from the beatifick Vision, why may not Souls be brought from *Hades* to perform Services of help to their Fellow Creatures, agreeable to their Natures? I could with pleasure leave my Ease and Tranquillity in *Hades*, to succour a good Man, and cool his Sufferings, when in the Hands of Tyrants and wicked Men, and return with pleasure to my happy Retreats again.

*Moses*, by the Doctor's general Rule, can be got no farther than *Hades* yet; however, he appeared with *Elias* at the Transfiguration of Christ.

Therefore it is against no Scripture, that Souls should come from *Hades*, neither is it more against Reason than the Appearance of Angels and Messengers from Heaven.

Whether it was a *Jewish*, or a new Christain Scheme, it is certain the Family *Peter* came to when he escaped out



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 177

of Prison, had a Notion of Spirits. When *Rhoda* constantly affirmed it was *Peter*, because she knew his Voice, they concluded it was his Angel, that is, he had followed *James's* Fate in Prison, and his Spirit walked: For they could not mean it was his guardian Angel; for I suppose it was not common for guardian Angels to knock at People's Doors; nor could it be a Messenger from him, for that could make no Surprise, nor create any Similitude of Voice.

But we have still stronger Scripture for our purpose: At our Blessed Saviour's Death, the Sepulchres opened their marble Jaws, and spewed out their Dead, who appeared unto many. The Scripture expressly says, they came out of their Graves. It's plain their Souls must be brought from *Hades*, and united not to Aerial Bodies, but to the very Bodies that lay in order for Putrefaction in the Grave.

Thus far the Scripture is plainly on our Side of the Question: If we come to Reason, the Difficulties are many, how they appear; but that they may, if God pleases, without any great Diminution to their Happiness, or his Honour, will still more evidently appear.

For they bring the same Tranquillity of Mind and Conscience they had with them in the Place. Their cold Forms are in no danger from warm and lively Temptations to Sin; if they perform their Duties and go back, they rather go home like Bees, and carry more Happiness to their Cells than they brought away.

There are only three bitter Springs, from whence all the Waters of Grief are diffused over this World, Want of Money, Want of Wit, and Temptation to Sin; none of which can these spirituous Beings taste.

I conclude, it is very rash, when we know so little of the Powers of Spirits and of Nature, absolutely to deny their Existence; and to narrow even the Power of God.

To come to the main Objection; How can we tell but when we think we see a Spirit, it may be only a strong Delusion upon the Brain, a violent Tacture, that makes the Apparition seem before the Person? To this I answer; If this proceeds from evil Spirits, it's giving them too strong a Power over the humane Mind; if from God, it's making him send a strong Delusion that we should believe a Lye, and therefore each are depraved and wicked Heresies. But if this Tacture proceeds from some corporeal Accident, or Pressure



## 128 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Pressure upon the Nerves of the Brain, nor one Appearance would fit in, or concur with any Moral Design or End, for which, it is evident, several have appeared. Moreover, Sleep is a Tacture upon the Brain, and how strongly forever it binds the Senses down, when we awake and re-unite to our former Way of Thinking, we are sensible of the Interval of the Difference in the Disposition of our Thinking System. The like happens in all Tactures that are not as strong as Death. But in those Tactures in which Thinking has any place, we can more easily know the Difference. As when a Robber enters into my House, and spoils my Goods in my Absence, upon my Return I can tell a Thief has been there, by the Disorder and Confusion I find.

This puts me upon a Personal Experiment of this supposed Tacture, when I am sure I had no superstitious Prejudices before, nor any Apprehensions, except lest I should break my Nose, or fall down. I saw the Light of the Apparition below, as I was taking leave above stairs of my Friends, and I fancied it only to be the Light of a Lanthorn, and followed that Light to guide my Steps; my Friends could perceive no Tacture upon my Brain at parting, for I told them there was a Lanthorn below, and that they need not give themselves the trouble of attending me farther. When I came to the bottom of the Stairs, the Light was certainly brought from *Hades*, and modified in such a manner, as to make the Appearance of a large Room, where there could be really none; for neither Sun, Stars, Moon, nor Candle shone upon the Place.

As to the Affection of my own Mind at that time, I do not remember my Reason was touched, nor my Senses more confounded, than a little Surprise could make them. I considered the Objects before me, and remember to this Day the Lineaments of their Faces.

I leave any Man to judge of this strange Accident as he pleases. I was not afraid, till one looked towards me; and not knowing the Powers of those Beings, I retreated as a certain Prince used to do before *Luxemburg*, as handsomely as I could; and had Sense enough to find the Chamber-Door from whence I came.

Upon the whole, I refer it to any Natural Philosopher, how this could proceed from any Tacture of the Brain, unless it could be a lasting one from my Mother's Womb; concerning which, I am no Judge.

For



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 129

For there are some Tactures that lay all the Senses in a dead Sleep, as Apoplexies, Epilepsies, and the like; where the Blood or the Nerves press upon the Brain; but in that case the Muscular Motion is in so great a measure taken away, that the Person lies like a Trunk upon the Ground.

There are lighter Pressures, very common with Madmen; which raise Visions, and very lively Images in the Brain: But these take only place when there is Absence of Reason; and when Reason returns, it resumes its Power over the Imagination, and all goes right again.

But Imagination can never work in such a manner in concert with Reason, nor till the Powers thereof are suspended; because the very Acts of Reasoning, while our Souls are united to our Bodies, depend very much upon the Texture of the Brain, and the regular Functions of the Understanding, of which the Imagination is a Part; and when that is disturbed, the Reason partakes of the Disorder; the Will assents, and we believe what we see to be real; and when the Delusion is taken away, Reason finds the Restraint to her off, re-assumes its Sovereignty, and guides the Imagination, as before.

Surely then a Man will find the Difference, as when he awakes out of Sleep. The Reason judges afterwards, how ever it was bound down and restrained before.

Thus far I have thought fit to premise concerning Apparitions, and if I had not had the help of Experience on my own part, I could have said not much on this subject; I mean as to the natural Effects of those Visions on the Brain. I hope the Reader will not take it ill, that I have endeavoured to destroy all the Power of Witchcraft, and of unclean Spirits, as Independent of the Power and Providence of God; I mean, that they cannot make strong Appearances to delude and terrify Mankind.

As to the raging Powers of these Spirits over barbarous Nations, I must beg the Doctor's pardon if I cannot come into that Bigotry: If our Blessed Saviour's Death was Universal, we must take all Mankind under his Protection as Candidates Potentially, though not Actually, for Immortality and eternal Happiness; and therefore I cannot consign them over to the Devil's Torments and Delusions before their Time: And as to God's uncovenanted Mercies, they are Mysteries, equally covered from us, as those of the Grave.

I shall



## 430 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

I shall return to the Doctor, and answer as far as I am able his Questions concerning the State of the Soul, and what Body it assumes after Death.

It is not absolutely necessary for them to have Bodies till the Resurrection; but what Vehicles they may assume in order to make their Appearances to us, is another Question, of a very difficult nature to resolve.

It answers no End, unless they sin, and repent in the other World, to have Bodies; but if they are exposed to Sin, the Grave is so far from being a Place of Rest, that it is only a Transition from one Place of Torment to another. The Peace promised to those who die in the Lord, is certainly Peace of Conscience, which Temptations equally disturb, as Storms and Tempests obscure the Brightness of the clearest Day. Our Bodies supply us with Temptations, and the Devil in this World helps us to more, but where the Body and the Devil are equally excluded, the Soul is no more tempted by them, it sees the Things that belong to its Peace without corporeal Eyes, or corporeal Affections.

You will say, they may perhaps have glorified Bodies, as they certainly will have at the Resurrection. There is no Absurdity in that Supposition, only there is not the least Revelation thereof in the Scripture, as the Doctor in this Chapter has fully proved; and there we must let this Matter rest.

The Doctor proceeds with his Questions concerning these Aereal Bodies in a very childish Method, as though he affected Declaiming more than Argument. He asks where the Situation of these Aereal Bodies shall be, in the Air, or in the Ether? whereas I do not see the necessity of *Heaven* being in one more than the other, or in either. I wonder what the Doctor meant by the Stress he lays upon the Word *Aereal*; whereas I mean no more by that, than Bodies endued with a very small Degree of specifick Levity and Gravity, and yet formed in such a manner as to answer all the Ends of Muscular Motion, and to be subject to no Corrosions by the Air; and therefore they need no nourishment to supply any Defect.

Such Bodies must not be in the Air, or at least not long, they must have proper Places appointed for them by the Providence of God. And I think the Doctor's Objection of the Damned having too much Light above the Atmosphere, is a little absurd; because if Light is so pleasant, their

Punish-



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 131

Punishment, for ought he knows to the contrary, may be to have their Eyes put out.

I know not what Opinion the Doctor may have of living in pure Ether above the Atmosphere. His Gardens at the Charter-house were much more agreeable, if we dwell upon Corporeal Pleasure, and the Delight of the Eyes; for vast Oceans of Light, are no more agreeable to me, than vast Oceans of Seas, with no Objects to entertain the Fancy.

His other Question concerning the Polity of the Dead, is not less ridiculous; for in those Aereal Realms of Liberty, there are certainly neither foolish Kings, nor rapacious Ministers of State, nor Criminals of any Rank; nor indeed have they that common political Cement, the Love of their Country; which they wish to forsake, and to be with God as soon as they can.

His following Enquiry is equally ridiculous, whether they keep their national Divisions in those Regions of the Air; he might have added, their national Humours too, and by this time Death is only travelling from one Country to another, only to live and converse with our Fathers, and perhaps hear some of our Faults severely told.

To be serious: The only Partitions will be of the Good from the Wicked, all Nations will send in their Quota to the Hades of the Just or of the Unjust, for we are all of a good or of a wicked Offspring; and so much will serve for that Head.

As to their Language, whether they speak as politely as the Doctor writes, I shall not here determine: I have no Reason to conclude, but that Brutes communicate their Thoughts without any Speech, as we may conjecture by innumerable Instances, by their Love of Society, and by their Acting in Concert, as Geese take their Flights in the Air mathematically, and Bees preserve their Monarchical Government, their Loyalty, and publick Spirits, without any Speech, only by a Communication of the same noble Sentiments, in a manner beyond our Power to account for.

Thus far I have pursued the Doctor through some Follies, and come now to the worst; his Enquiry into the Religion of the Dead, provided they have corporeal Beings. I wish for his own sake, he had distinguished here a little better, and made however the great Partition between the Happy and the Unhappy: They who pass their Times away in Despair of God's Mercy, and without any Prospect



### III Of the STATE of the DEAD.

spect of the Beatific Vision, or even Hopes of ever seeing the same, can look with very little comfort upon Religion; and as to the Good, they will surely know upon what Grounds they build their Hopes of immortal Happiness, and by what Religion they are saved.

By what Authority the Doctor mixes the whole Herd of Good and Bad together, I cannot tell; for such a Communication is inconsistent with the Notion of the intermediate Happiness before that Great Day. Disputations about Religion, and burning Quarrels are inconsistent with that peaceful State, and by no means the Consequences of the Supposition, that the departed Souls have Visible and Aereal Bodies. And therefore his Banter upon Religious Disputes, looks to me very much like ridiculing a future State in general; for the same Objections extend to his Incorporeal *Hades*, as to his Corporeal one.

But suppose Souls have no Communication, but are lodged in their distinct Cells, expecting their future Happiness, or Doom; then all these fantastical Objections fly away.

### CHAP. V.

*A Transition to the other Parts of this Treatise: And, first, concerning the Coming of Christ, and the Conflagration of the World.*

FROM the silent Shades of the Dead, let us now return to the great Theatre of the World; where a new Face of Things, and new Phenomenons appear: Behold Christ coming in the Clouds, a flaming World, and the Rising Dead ready to stand before the Tribunal of Justice. Illustrious Views and Scenes then shall follow; new Heavens and a new Earth; the millenary Reign of Christ; and lastly, the Consummation of all Things. These

are

are the  
accor  
cred S  
The  
mistak  
is to o  
the sa  
Heads  
as to  
ner, a  
must  
ration  
Lastly  
must  
God.

As  
Comi  
a Bo  
the I  
fligh  
place  
judge  
he to  
sociat  
the S  
also  
Trib  
Judg  
Stat  
his F  
every  
lemn  
ons



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 133

are the important Subjects of our Enquiries which according to our Capacities, and the Light of sacred Scripture, we shall follow.

The four first of these Incidents, if I am not mistaken, happen at one and the same time: Christ is to come to Judgement in Flames of \* Fire, and at the same Time the Dead are to rise. These four Heads, therefore, I lay down as expressly revealed as to the main: But when we come to the Manner, and Method, and Circumstances thereof, we must distinguish the vulgar Hypothesis from the rational one, the literal from the mysterious Sense. Lastly, those Things intirely concealed from us must be referred to the secret Dispensations of God.

As to the Conflagration of the World, and the Coming of Christ, we have fully treated thereof, in a Book, which is the third Part of the Theory of the Earth; and we shall here only briefly and slightly draw our Pen over the same again in this place. Christ will come to judge and to reign; to judge all Men, and to reign with his Saints: Both he told to his disciples, and took them as his Associates in his Throne. † In the Regeneration, when the Son of Man shall sit in the Throne of his Glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve Thrones, judging the twelve Tribes of Israel. He joins his Kingdom, and his Judgement together before, speaking of a future State: \*\* For the Son of Man shall come in the Glory of his Father, with his Angels; and then he shall reward every Man according to his Works. And in that solemn Speech upon the Mount of Olives, he mentions his return upon Earth; †† And then shall appear

\* 2 Thess. i. 7, 8. &c. † Mat. xix. 28. \*\* Mat. xvi. 27, 28. †† Mat. xxiv. 30.



### 134 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

the Sign of the Son of Man in Heaven; and then shall all the Tribes of the Earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of Man coming in the Clouds of Heaven with Power and great Glory; and he shall send his Angels with a great Sound of a Trumpet; and they shall gather together his Elect from the four Winds, from one End of Heaven to the other. From these and other Places, from the Mouth of Christ, we are instructed in his future Return upon the Earth, which his Messengers and Apostles over and over again preached. I know these Sayings of Christ concerning his future Coming, are by some mutilated and restrained only to the Destruction of Jerusalem. Though Christ was in Heaven at the Destruction of that Place, and did not appear unless improperly and metaphorically; as the Judgements and Operations of God are sometimes put down for his Person. Moreover, the outward Splendour, the Glory of the Father, and the Company of Angels in these Descriptions, have a view only to his proper and personal Appearance. Lastly, The universal Judgement and End of the World are connected with this Coming of Christ; his judicial Appearance is plainly told, *Mat. xix. 28.* which may be compared with *Revelations xx. 4, 11, 12,* and his judicial Rewarding every Man according to their Works, from *Mat. xvi. 27, 28.* And in Chap. xxv. of *St. Matt. v. 31, 32.* the Appearance and the judicial Power of Christ are connected; *When the Son of Man shall come in his Glory, and all the holy Angels with him, then shall he sit upon the Throne of his Glory, and before him shall be gathered all Nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a Shepherd divideth the Sheep from the Goats, &c.* Therefore as these Places plainly point out the universal Judgement in the Coming of Christ, so that Judgement has an indissoluble Connection with the  
End

End  
to fa  
Place  
the  
groun  
Place  
with  
ever  
only  
Worl  
tusale  
to the  
a rasi  
to cal  
Our  
St. M  
that r  
the O  
ted tw  
Chapt  
Siege.  
of the  
Writ;  
fore bo  
As  
shall be  
all Na  
Things  
they w  
have at  
Tribes  
ference  
should  
digies  
Earth,  
Signs p



End of the World. Some indeed have presumed to say, that neither this Chapter, nor the parallel Places, refer to the End of the World; but only to the Destruction of *Jerusalem*: A Notion as ill grounded as presuming, because in one or more Places, the Destruction of that Place is mentioned with the Coming of Christ: Therefore, wheresoever the glorious Coming of Christ, compatible only with the Extinction of Nature and of the World, and with Signs bearing no Relation to *Jerusalem*, is foretold in the Gospel; this they apply to the Destruction of that one City and People, by a rash and bold Detorsion of sacred Scriptures, to call it no worse.

Our Contest now is about this very Chapter of *St. Matthew*, in which they say there is nothing that respects the End of the World, or more than the Overthrow of the *Jews*. This may be confuted two ways: *First*, Many Things are said in this Chapter, which happened in no Account of that Siege. *Secondly*, The Coming of Christ, and the End of the World, described in other Places of the sacred Writ, exactly agree with this Chapter; and therefore both ought to be understood in the same Sense.

As to the first; *And this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the World, for a Witness unto all Nations, and then shall the End come.* These Things still remain to be compleated, or at least they were not before that Siege. But some will have *all the World* to mean no more than all the Tribes and People of the *Jews*; a very strained Inference: However, if there was nothing else, I should not insist upon this. But *2dly*, The Prodigies and Wonders of the Heavens, and of the Earth, and of Christ coming in the Clouds, the Signs preceeding the universal Dissolution, did not  
L happen



## 136 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

happen at the Destruction of Jerusalem: They are described in St. Matthew; Immediately after the Tribulation of these Days, shall the Sun be darkened, and the Moon shall not give her Light, and the Stars shall fall from Heaven, and the Powers of the Heavens shall be shaken; and then shall appear the Sign of the Son of Man in Heaven; and then shall all the Tribes of the Earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of Man coming in the Clouds of Heaven with Power and great Glory; Mat. xxiv. 29. But at the Destruction of Jerusalem, Christ nowhere appeared in the Clouds of Heaven, neither Sun nor Moon lost their Splendour, nor were the Heavens shaken. There was indeed a Comet, whose Tail represented a Sword; but the other Portents mentioned by \* Josephus were of another Kind.

Over and above the Signs in the Heavens, the sacred Scriptures mention Prodigies of the Earth; as Earthquakes and Roarings of the Sea: And there shall be Signs in the Sun, and in the Moon, and in the Stars; and upon the Earth Distress of Nations with Perplexity, the Sea and the Waves roaring. But what has Jerusalem to do with the Sea, and with the Raging thereof? Did any Thing of that nature happen then? No, certainly, these Accidents relate to a far greater Catastrophe, the Dissolution of the World, as our blessed Saviour mentions the Times of Noah and the Deluge; an universal, and not a national Calamity.

I am not ignorant, that Commentators in explaining these Phenomenons, recur to Metaphors and Allegories, and alledge several Places in the Prophets to support these figurative Expressions. I

\* Joseph. de Bell. Jud. l. 7. c. 12.

† Luke xxi.

grant

grant  
it foll  
bought  
of the  
ral on  
depart  
before  
and E  
World  
Nature  
structio  
the W  
Acciden  
founded  
Type a  
Idioms  
phets e  
Ascent  
Thus  
Argume  
riod of  
that of  
shall be  
of the  
Period  
whose  
came. T  
the last  
of the  
Conver  
Mention  
of Christ  
that only  
Christ fa



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 117

grant there may be some taken in that manner; yet it follows not that always, and in all Places, they ought to be taken in a figurative Sense. The Style of the Gospel is more correct and close to the literal one, from which the Commentator must never depart, unless Necessity drives him; and we have before proved, that these Phenomenons of the Sea and Earth are literally to happen at the End of the World, the general Conflagration and Labour of Nature. See *Theory of the Earth*, lib. 3. The Destruction of *Jerusalem* was a Type of the End of the World, and therefore, without wonder, the Accidents of one and the other are mixed and confounded together in the sacred Scriptures. The Type and the Archetype have a Communication of Idioms and Phrases, and therefore, with the Prophets each Prophecy is compleated, by a gradual Ascent to the highest of all.

Thus far as to external Signs, being our second Argument. The third shall be taken from the Period of this Prophecy, being intirely different from that of the Destruction of *Jerusalem*; *Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the Times of the Gentiles be fulfilled*, Luke xxi. 24. This Period is evidently later than that of *Jerusalem*, whose Destruction was to continue till the other came. This latter therefore could be no other than the last Period of the World, or the Restauration of the *Jews* at the End thereof, after the compleat Conversion of the *Gentiles*. The Signs follow the Mention \* of this Period in Heaven and Earth, and of Christ's Coming in the Clouds, and refer to that only, and not to *Jerusalem*: And whereas Christ says, † *But of that Day knoweth no Man, no*

---

\* Luke xxi. 25, 26, 27. † Mat. xxviii. 36.



138 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

not the *Angels of Heaven*; that Day must be, in all probability, later than the *Everſion*, a ſmall Diſtance of Time, no more than half an Age, and not beyond the Sphere of the *Angel's Knowledge*; and therefore it is more likely to refer to a Series of Ages between, to the End of the World.

Thus far concerning the Signs; and if we proceed to compare this Prophecy with others in the holy Scriptures, of the great Coming of *Chriſt*, and the Day of Judgement, from the Similitude of Expreſſions, we ſhall point out this very Time inſiſted upon, and find them exactly agree; in both *Chriſt* is ſaid to come in the Clouds, in both he has the Company of *Angels*, and the Sound of the Trumpet. But you on the contrary Side of the Queſtion tell me what Part of the Scripture does mention the real, perſonal, and ſupreme Coming of *Chriſt*? I take for granted, you do not entirely deny this agreeable and moſt deſirable Coming; and in our Opinion, both *Chriſt* and the Apoſtles ſpeak of the ſame in many Places: As for Example, *Mat.* xvi. 27. Nevertheless you in effect take away *Mat.* xxiv. *Mat.* xxvi. 64. *Mat.* xix. 28. And as to *Mat.* xxv. 31, 32. You either deny, or doubt about the ſame.

Moreover, the Apoſtles in ſeveral Places deſcribe the Coming of *Chriſt* in the ſame manner; for Example, *2 Theſſ.* i. 7, 8. You perverſely deny even this; neither the Company of *Angels*, nor the flaming and revengeful Fire, nor the everlaſting Deſtruction of the Wicked, are Signs ſufficient to prove this laſt Coming of *Chriſt*; nor perhaps will you aſſent to *2 Pet.* iii. 4, 7, 10. All which we aſſert expreſſly to point out the Coming of the Lord, and the Diſſolution of the World. Laſtly, we inſiſt upon *Jude* 14, 15. *Revel.* i. 7. As all denoting the ſame judicial

judicial  
your  
here  
W  
Hope  
ed av  
Servic  
of the  
very  
Violen  
nity o  
and t  
the F  
even  
trious  
narrow  
a min  
richeſt  
pretat  
What  
burnin  
by St.  
manne  
and to  
the De  
from i  
to be  
ments

• See  
Not. 6.  
† Nu  
cuſſed b  
68. Thi  
ing the  
ſtand Ba



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 139

judicial and visible Coming of Christ; yet you turn your Back upon these and many more, too long here to insert.

We hardly bear to have the sacred Promises and Hopes of the future \* Coming of Christ thus snatched away; nor do our Adversaries perform much Service to Christianity, in diminishing the Weight of those Prophecies, and reducing the Sense into very narrow Bounds, and offering very often even Violence thereto; especially when the whole Solemnity of the supreme Judgement is plainly described, and the Conflagration of the World, the Glory of the Father, the angelick Chorus, and the Descent even of Christ in Clouds from Heaven; all illustrious Appearances are reduced to Shadows, or narrowed into a national Excision of no more than a minute Corner of the World. They rob the richest Vein of its Ore, and drive, by this Interpretation, even the natural Force and Sense away. What can be more plain and evident, than the burning of the World, being designed and laid down by St. Peter and St. Paul, although melted in this manner into Allegories. And what is more hard still, and touches our Argument closely, they turn even the Descent of Christ from Heaven, *Mat. xxii. 30.* from its literal and true Sense †, and will have it to be no more than the Judgements and Punishments of God, sent from Heaven upon the World;

---

\* See Dr. Hammond upon these Places, upon *Mat. xxiv. 3. Not. 6. 2 Thessal. i. 2 Pet. iii. Lightfoot in Mar. c. iv. p. 18.*

† *Nubem*, or *Nubis*, are to be taken literally. See this discussed by Gerbard. Tom. IX. *de Extremis Judiciis*, p. 67. 68. This is taken from *Dan. vii. 13.* when he speaks concerning the second Coming of Christ. The Jews by Clouds understand Bands of Angels, says Pearson on the Creed, p. 312. Marg.



## 140 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

though the Angel is the best Commentator, who expressly says his Coming shall be personal; *This same Jesus which is taken up from you into Heaven, shall so come in like Manner as ye have seen him go into Heaven; Act. i. 11.* that is, personally and visibly in the Clouds.

It's worth while to observe at once, that nothing may be omitted in so momentous and important a Controversy, that unless Christ returns from Heaven, we are lost, our Hopes are vain, and our Faith to no purpose, as the Apostle says of the Resurrection: But there are innumerable other Arguments and Testimonies for this glorious and desirable Coming in the sacred Scriptures, expressed under different Names; sometimes it is *παρουσία*, Presence; in other Places *ἀποκάλυψις*, Revelation; *1 Cor. i. 7. 2 Thess. i. 7. 1 Pet. i. 7, 13. ch. iv. 13. Luke xvii. 30.* Sometimes *ἐπιφάνεια*, Appearing; *2 Thess. ii. 8. 1 Tim. vi. 14. 2 Tim. iv. 1. 8. Tit. ii. 13.* In other Places *φανερωσις*, *Col. iii. 4. 1 Pet. v. 4.* This Day is called by the Prophet, and by the Apostle, *That great and notable Day of the Lord*; in which, says God, *And I will shew Wonders in Heaven above, and Signs in the Earth beneath, Blood, and Fire, and Vapour of Smoke; the Sun shall be turned into Darkness, and the Moon into Blood, before that great and notable Day of the Lord come.* These Signs and Prodigies are not yet brought upon the Stage; they are reserved for the last Act, for the concluding Spectacles and Representations. Nor can it be said on the other Side, that when this Prophecy was cited, the Effusion of the Holy Spirit compleated the whole; whereas the Fulfilling was then only in part, and no more than as to divine Inspirations and Gifts: But it is plain the latter Part, the Changes and Prodigies on the external Face of Nature, had

no



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 141

no Relation to the Effusion of the Holy Spirit, attended only with a mighty rushing Wind.

Many other great and wonderful Portents remain for that Coming of our Lord. In that terrible Day, as the Prophet says as nothing can be more terrible, than the Face of an angry Deity to wicked Men, at whose Appearance the Earth will tremble, and the Face of Heaven look sour, and Nature languish, even as giving up to Death; the Sun will put on Darkness, and the Moon Blood; *Mens Hearts failing them for Fear, and looking after those Things which are coming on the Earth, Luke xxi. 26. i. e. the Wicked.* As to the Good, says the Evangelist, *Then shall they see the Son of Man coming in a Cloud with Power and great Glory, ver. 24.* whose Way shall be illuminated with Armies of Angels, more numerous and shining than the Stars.

Thus we have proved the Coming of Christ from the sacred Scriptures; but to paint his Glory, and to point out the Time, is beyond the Power of a human Genius. As to the first, we have given only a Specimen, in a former Book of ours, *viz. Theory of the Earth, l. 3. c. 12.* And as to the latter, it must be confessed, the primitive Christians and Apostles themselves, as far as we can gather from the Scriptures, believed that Coming to be just at hand. We shall say more upon this Head, when we come to speak of the Judgement it self, that we may not over-load this Chapter.

We are taught by the \* holy Scriptures, the Coming of Christ is attended with the Conflagration of the World; St. Paul expressly says it to the *Thessalonians, When the Lord Jesus shall be revealed*,

---

\* The Doctor out-runs the Scripture here,

L 4

from



## 142 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

from Heaven with his mighty Angels in flaming Fire, taking Vengeance, 2 Thess. i. 7, 8. In like manner the Apostle Peter joins the Coming of Christ, or the Day of the Lord, with the Combustion and Dissolution of the World; But the Day of the Lord will come as a Thief in the Night, in the which the Heavens shall pass away with a great Noise, and the Elements shall melt away with fervent Heat; the Earth also, and the Works that are therein, shall be burnt up \*. We have the Evidence of both Testaments, that the Lord shall come in Fire to Judgement. And in the same Chapter, in the seventh Verse, Peter says, But the Heavens and the Earth which are now, by the same Word are kept in store, reserved unto Fire against the Day of Judgement and Perdition of ungodly Men. The Apostle Paul, if I am not mistaken, has regard to this in the first to the Corinthians; Every Man's Work shall be made manifest, for the Day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by Fire †. Likewise in another place, But a certain fearful looking for of Judgement and fiery Indignation, which shall devour the Adversaries ||.

The Prophets have all the same Preparations for that Coming of the Lord to destroy his Enemies, as Fire, Wrath, and the Presence of the Deity. It is frequent in the Psalms of David \*\*, and plain in Isaiah; For behold the Lord will come with Fire, and with his Chariots like a Whirlwind, to render his Anger with Fury, and his Rebuke with Flames of Fire; Isaiah lxvi. 15. To the same purpose the Prophet, Chap. xxxiv. ver. 8, 9, 10 ††. Moreover, in Daniel, the Antient of Days is described on his Tribunal covered with Flames; His Throne was like a fiery Flame, and

\* 2 Pet. iii. 1.

† 1 Cor. iii. 13.

|| Heb. x. 27.

\*\* Psalm xi. 6 — l. 3. lxviii. 2. lxxxiii. 15. xcvi. 3.

†† These Texts will not do, this in Daniel is more to the purpose.

his

his W  
came o  
him;  
him;  
Dan.  
Comin  
behold  
all the  
Stubble  
Mal. i

Th  
confir  
Work  
Concl  
Faith.  
Confla  
so man  
Time  
the F  
burn  
More  
als of  
of T  
Earth  
and I  
Earth  
ously  
refer  
this

Th  
which  
Texts  
pose,



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 143

his Wheels as burning Fire; a fiery Stream issued and came out before him, thousand thousands ministred unto him; and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him; the Judgement was set, and the Books were opened, Dan. vii. 9, 10. The same Face of Nature at the Coming of the Lord, is described in *Malachi*; For behold the Day cometh, that shall burn as an Oven, and all the Proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be Scubble; and the Day that cometh shall burn them up; Mal. i. 4.

Thus far we have brought the sacred Writers to confirm this Notion of the Conflagration of the World at the Coming of Christ, and we fix this Conclusion amongst the plain Articles of Christian Faith. There are other Concomitants attending this Conflagration highly worthy of Regard, though not so manifest and necessary: For Instance, to know the Time of this general Conflagration, the Limits of the Flames, and whether they mount upward, or burn downwards to the Center of the Earth, Moreover, to know the Original and the Materials of this universal Fire, adapted to the Nature of Things, and to the Matter and Form of the Earth. Lastly, to define its Beginning, Progress, and End; and after the Burning, what Face the Earth will have: All these Things we have copiously treated upon in our THEORY, whither I refer the Reader, if he desires to know more upon this Subject.

## REMARKS.

This general Conflagration of the World, is a Notion of which the Doctor is extremely fond; he has drawn out his Texts of Scripture very copiously, with a Design, I suppose, that some the Reader may pick, and others he may  
let



## 144 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

let alone. The Doctor has cast his Net over all the Texts of Scripture that mention Fire, and in his Works has done all Manner of Justice to the two Elements of Water and Fire.

The Texts to prove that Fire shall come upon the Earth, are too plain to be taken in a metaphorical Sense; and one plain one is as good as a thousand others. I shall not deny the Doctor them. To let that pass, it remains to help him a little in clearing the 24th Chapter of St. Matthew, because there are two different Catastrophes so closely related together, that one is very often taken for the other: I shall only just abridge and explain the Chapter.

Our blessed Saviour departing out of the Temple, his Disciples came to him to shew him the beautiful Fabrick thereof: He told them there should not be one Stone left upon another.

His Disciples from hence took the hint to ask him three Particulars. 1<sup>st</sup>, When the Destruction of the Temple would be. 2<sup>dly</sup>, What should be the Signs of his Coming. And 3<sup>dly</sup>, What should be the Signs of the End of the World. It is therefore a common Mistake, to connect the two last with the first, which have no Relation together, no more than that the Destruction of the Temple put them in mind of the Dissolution of the Earth; into whose Bowels it was fixed, and upon whose Foundations that glorious Fabrick stood. Our blessed Saviour, previously to his Answer to their first Question, cautions them to provide against Hypocrisy and Impostors, as the Hereticks of that Age are plainly pointed out; and then proceeds to tell them the antecedent Marks of that dismal Catastrophe, the Civil Wars and Contentions in the Roman Empire, *Kingdom shall rise against Kingdom*; that is, one Division of the Roman Empire shall rise against the other; a very beautiful Description of unnatural Dissensions in that Government: You shall have moreover other Signs, as Famines, Pestilences, and Earthquakes, all which afterwards came to pass.

These, says he, are the Beginning of Sorrows: Then your Persecutions will come on; you shall be afflicted by your Enemies, and betrayed by your Friends: The first shall give you a full Harvest of Miseries to reap, and your treacherous Friends shall glean after them, and you shall eat the Bread of their making.

In the mean time, the Zeal even of the Converts to Christianity shall cool, Numbers shall fall off after the first



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 145

first Heat, and leave the brighter Part behind, who are to be saved.

And by that Time the Gospel has reached the *Indies* on one Side, and *Britain* on the other, then the Catastrophe will come, and you will know it, when you see the *Roman* Power take Possession of the Holy of Holies; then flee every Man, and hide your selves for Safety. And except a speedy End be put to the Malice and Fury of the devouring Sword, and Famine, and Pestilence; not one of your Nation would be left to tell the Tale: But for the sake of the Christians, my Elect, I will shorten the Miseries of those Times.

When these Things happen, many will say that Christ is coming, and will shew even pretended Signs and Wonders to prove it: But believe them not, for his Coming shall be as swift and as unexpected as Lightning. And after the Tribulations and Prodigies of his Coming, the Effects will be, a Failure in the Light of the Sun, which will deprive the Moon of her borrowed Light also. The Stars shall lose their centrifugal Quality in some measure, and jumble in the universal Confusion of the Laws of Gravitation: and some will be attracted even to the Earth, and others leave their Orb for Straight-Lines, and so seem to fall from the Sky. Then shall the Son of Man come, and after that the Judgement: But as to the Day and Hour of his Coming, and of the End of the World, they both will be together; but when, not Angels are let into the Secret.

The Series and Connection of the Chapter, is evident enough from this Paraphrase; our Blessed Saviour falls easily from one Question into another, in the Way of Discourse, in one continued Chain. The Coming of the Son of Man, is by many Divines confounded with his Judgements upon the *Jews*, though they are utterly distinct; and our Doctor himself is led into this Errour with the rest, which makes him rashly say, the Apostles believed the Day of Judgement to be then at Hand.



## C H A P. VI.

*Concerning the Supreme Judgement, its Apparatus, Manner, End and Effect.*

**A**T the Coming of our Lord the Dead rise and stand before Judgement, from whence the Resurrection in the Order of Things ought to be first. However we shall treat of those first which are more easily dispatched; and as the Resurrection is the most important and difficult Doctrine, we shall reserve that to the last.

We must therefore, in order to begin with the Apparatus of that Supreme Judgement, as we find it in the Sacred Scriptures, and then the Rationale thereof shall be explained. Lastly, we shall enlarge upon the Effects thereof upon the Innocent and the Guilty. I shall proceed upon these Heads, rejecting the Turns, Queries, and Windings of the Schools, that waste and dissipate, rather than improve the Forces of the Mind.

As to the outward Apparatus, he is described as a Judge sitting upon his Tribunal, invested with a Guard by the prophet *Daniel*\*; *I beheld till the Thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of Days did sit, whose Garment was white as Snow, and the Hair of his Head like pure Wooll; his Throne was like the fiery Flame, and his Wheels as burning Fire, a fiery Stream issued and came forth from before him, thousand thousands ministred unto him, and ten thousand times ten*

\* *Dan. vii. 9, 10.*



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 147

thousand stood before him, the Judgement was set, and the Books were opened.

In the Revelations of † St. John, the Judge, Court, and all are represented in one view; And I saw a great white Throne, and him that sat on it, from whose Face the Earth and the Heaven fled away, and there was found no Place for them: And I saw the Dead, small and great, stand before God, and the Books were opened, and another Book was opened, which is the Book of Life, and the Dead were judged out of those things which were written in the Books, according to their Works, and the Sea gave up the Dead which were in it, and Death and Hell delivered up the Dead which were in them, and they were judged, every Man according to their Works; and whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life, was cast into the Lake of Fire. This indeed is more copious than Daniel's, though the Revelations for the most part fall in exactly with him. Let us hear next Christ's own Description of the Process of this Judgement, and the Sentence passed upon both good and bad\*: When the Son of Man shall come in his Glory, and all the holy Angels with him, then shall he sit upon the Throne of his Glory, and before him shall be gathered all Nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a Shepherd divideth his Sheep from the Goats, and he shall set the Sheep on his right hand, but the Goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the Foundation of the World: And then he shall say also to them on the left hand, Depart from me ye Cursed into everlasting Fire, prepared for the Devil and his Angels †? Thus far Christ.

† Rev. xx. 11, 12, 13, 15.

\* Mat. xxv. 31, 32, 33, 34, 41.

† Mat. xix. 28.

2 Cor. ii. 3. Rev. ii. 4.

And



## 148 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

And in other Places it is added, That he shall have with him, sitting at the same Judgement, his Apostles and Saints.

If we compare these with other Places in the Sacred Writ, we may come at the following Representation of the last Judgment: A flaming Throne being erected, on this Christ will sit as Judge, assisted by his Apostles and Saints; at his Back his Ministers and Angels stand: The pale trembling Dead are summoned by Sound of Trumpet before the Tribunal, who being placed in their Order, and Silence commanded, the Register and Memorial-Books are brought, in which the Facts, Sayings, and Thoughts of every one in his past Life are noted down. When these are opened and read, every Man's Case is brought to the Test of what he has done in the Body. After a full Examination, the Wicked being placed on the Left, and the Good on the Right, this dire Sentence is pronounced by the Judge against the Wicked; *Go ye Cursed into everlasting Fire*; and upon the Good this joyful one, *Come ye blessed of my Father, possess the Kingdom prepared for you from the Beginning of the World.*

In this Description of the Day of Judgement, some Things are represented theatrically, and after the Forms of human Courts, that will never happen at that Day. As to this, I believe we have no Adversary. And on the other Side some Things will literally come to pass; Christ will come personally, and visibly from Heaven with Crouds of Angels, and at his Coming the Dead will rise, undergo Examination, and their Fate will depend upon the Event thereof. These things will happen under the Government of Christ, as the Scriptures witness, *Mat. xix. 28. John v. 22, 27. Acts. xvii. 13. Rom. xiv. 9.* and in many other Places.

We



We see therefore in this Representation of the Judgement a Mixture of the common and known with the mysterious Parts. It is a wise Man's Business to distinguish each. The Trial of Souls, their Punishment and Rewards are the Scope and End of this Process; nor is it of Consequence, whether it is a Forensic one or not, provided the End is answer'd. Therefore some of the Antients will have the Trial to be by Fire in the Conflagration of the World; concerning which, we shall speak hereafter. Nevertheless the sacred Scripture, in setting this Judgement out, and in adorning the same, accommodates the whole Description to human Understanding and Capacity. For I believe not that Books and Registers are kept in the Air to record the Transactions of our Lives; the Conscience, and the State of the Soul are Evidences of Merit, and sufficiently point out our Fate.

We say these Narrations are adapted to human Customs and Manners, and in a great measure to those of the Heathens, who place Judges in Hell; Guardians of Justice to punish and reward, and have their Offices assigned to reward and punish human Actions: Their Names and Offices, and Kinds of Punishments inflicted on the Wicked, are found in the Grecian Authors. Plato particularly has exhausted this Subject in many Places in his *Phædon* and *Gorgias*, towards the End; and in his tenth Book *de Republicâ*, from the Relation of *Eris Armenius* returned from the Dead. These, and many other things concerning the State of the Dead, the Greeks borrowed from the \* *Egyptians*, according to *Diodorus*

*Siculus*.

---

\* Τὰς καὶ τῶν ἀσέβων ἐν αἰδῷ τιμωρίας, καὶ τὰς τῶν ἱερέων ληϊμῶνας, καὶ τὰς παρὰ τοῖς πολλοῖς εἰδολοποιίας ἀνά-



130 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

*Siculus*, and of whom *Orpheus* was the first, who was followed by the ancient Poets, and Greek Theologists.

This by the Bye. It's more worth observing, that some of the Antients supposed no personal Ministration, or Preparation to distribute the Fate of Souls. But that the Nature of Things was so ordered by divine Providence, every thing just and Righteous spontaneously fell to the Souls released from the mortal Body. This Force, or Power of God or Nature, they called *Nemesis* and *Adrastia*; ἀναποδρασον αἰτίαν ἕσσαν κατὰ φύσιν; for none could avoid this Law of Nature, as says the Author of the Book *de Mundo*. By *Ammianus Marcellinus*, it is called *Adrastia*, or *Nemesis*, the Avenger of wicked Actions, and the Rewarder of the Good; whom the antient Divines, says he, feigned to be the Daughter of Justice, and from the hidden Womb of Eternity, to oversee all human Affairs. She is the Queen of Causes, the Arbitrator of all Affairs, and Moderator; she governs the Fate of Lots, and the various Turns that happen in the World.

But the antient Philosophers and Divines did not fully explain this Force of Nature, distributing Justice in a future State, without a judicial Process. Several of the Christian Fathers would have a Probation and Crisis by Fire in the Conflagration of the World; the Souls to be put therein belonging to this Earth, and to undergo a greater or less Degree of Burning, in Proportion to their Purity or Impurity. This is founded upon the

ἀναπεπλάσμενας παρυσταγὰν μινόμενον τὰ σπέρματα τὰς κατ' Αἴγυπτον, &c. These, and more of the same Nature concerning *Orpheus*, and the *Egyptians*, see in *Diodorus Siculus*. l. 1. m. fol. 86.

Apostle's



# Of the STATE of the DEAD. 151

Apostle's Words, 1 Cor. iii. 13. Every Man's Work shall be made manifest, for the Day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by Fire, and the Fire shall try every one's Work, of what sort it is. Origen against \* Celsus, calls the last Fire, asserted by the Grecian Philosophers, πῦρ καθαρσιον τῷ κόσμῳ, a Fire to purge the World, εἶκος δ' ὅτι καὶ ἑκάστῳ τῶν δομένων τῆς δια τῆ πυρὸς δίχης ἀμα καὶ ἱατρίας καίοντο. μὲν, καὶ ἡ καλῶς καίοντο τῆς μὴ ἔχοντες ὕλην δομένην ἀναλῆσθαι ὑπ' ἐκείνῃ τῇ πυρὸς καίοντο. δὲ, καὶ καλῶς καίοντο τῆς ἐν τῇ δια τῶν προαίτιων καὶ λόγων, καὶ νοημάτων, τρηπικῶς λεγομένη οἰκοδομῇ ξύλα, χόρτον, ἢ καλῶς οἰκοδομήσαντας. It is very likely that all Men have occasion for this Fire, either for Punishment or Remedy, Burning, and not Burning those who have not Matter, a proper Subject for the Fire; Burning, and not Burning those, who in their Words and Thoughts build upon the Foundation Wood, Hay, and Stubble. He adds afterwards, † Ὁ λόγος ἐν μέντοι μὲν ἀγένης τῇ πυρὸς καὶ τῶν κολάσεων φησι διαμείνειν τῆς τὰ δόγματα καὶ τὰ ἥθη, καὶ τὸ ἡγεμονικὸν ἀκρῶς καθαρευμένους τῆς δὲ μὴ τοιαύτης, κατὰ τὴν ἀξίαν χερσονύχας τῇ δια πυρὸς κολάσεως οἰκονομία, ἐν ταῖς ἐπὶ τινὶ τέλει φησὶν ἵστασθαι, ὅ τῳ Θεῷ ἀρμόδιον ἐπαγεῖν τοῖς κατ' εἰκόνα ὡς τῷ πτωχῶν, καὶ παρὰ τὸ βέλημα τῆς κατ' εἰκόνα φύσεως βεβήκασιν. This Doctrine only saves them from the Fire, free and untouched, who are already pure and purged as to all Opinions, Manners and Affections of the Soul: But as to the rest, whose Faults require this fiery and penal Dispensation, it is allotted to them for a certain Time, according to the Pleasure of God, who being made according to the Divine Nature, concerning the Will of that God, an-

\* Orig. cont. Cels. l. 5. p. 240, 241. † lb.



## 152 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

swer by no means in their Lives to that Original. This Opinion concerning the Tryal of Souls by Fire hereafter, though not to be proved by the Light of Nature; the Patrons thereof found it upon the above-mentioned Chapter to the *Corinthians*, which we shall here examine.

Many Questions have arisen concerning this Place of the Apostle; but as to our Controversy, the whole depends upon the Signification of two words, what the Apostle understands by **THAT DAY**, and by **FIRE**. Some suppose it only a metaphorical Fire, Trouble and Affliction; we for our Parts determine it to be a material, natural Fire, to come upon us at the Conflagration of the World, and by **THAT DAY**, we understand the Day of Judgement, and the Day of the Lord. This is the most plain and easy Sense upon the Words, and may be confirmed by parallel Places in the Scriptures; as *1 Thess. v. 4.* *ἵνα ἡ ἡμετέρα ὥρα ὡς κλέωντες καὶ ἀδόκητον.* *That the Day should overtake you as a Thief.* This is the Day of the Lord by *ver. 2.* of this Chapter; for that the Day of the Lord which cometh as a Thief in the Night is, *St. Peter* says, the Day in which the World is to be burnt; \* *But the Day of the Lord will come as a Thief in the Night, in which the Heavens shall pass away with a great Noise.* In the same manner, *ἡμετέρα* or **DAY**, is taken by the Apostle to the *Hebrews*, *x. 25.* *Τοσούτω μᾶλλον ὅσα ἐλευστέρα ἡμετέραν τὴν ἡμετέραν.* *And so much the more as ye see the Day approaching.* Here *ἡμετέρα* signifies the Day of the Lord, the Day of Judgement, and of Conflagration; as appears from the 27th Verse, for wherever you meet with *ἡμετέρα, κατ' ἐξοχήν, † THAT DAY*, it al-

\* *2 Pet. iii. 10.* † *2 Thes. i. 10. 2 Tim. i. 12, 18. iv. 8.*

ways

ways  
the Lo

Seco  
expres  
ἐν τῷ  
on of t  
φλογός,  
flaming  
these tw  
Time;  
or to th  
Scriptu  
Fire; i  
Purpose

More  
ἐκλωλὶ  
qually  
Day of  
ὡς  
bring to  
make m  
same pu  
To th  
Fathers  
ving ex  
precious  
Differen  
but in a  
it) the D  
following

† *1 Co  
\* Τῇ  
ἐκλωλὶ  
ἀπὸ τῆς  
† Κατ'  
ἐκλωλὶ*



ways denotes, in the Sacred Scriptures, the Day of the Lord, or the Day of Judgement.

Secondly, This Day mentioned by the Apostle, is expressly said to be the Day to be revealed by Fire, *ἐν πυρὶ ἀποκαλυπτεται*, the fiery Day, the Revelation of the Lord, *ἐν τῇ ἀποκαλύψει τοῦ Κυρίου—ἐν πυρὶ φλογός*, as the Apostle says to the *Thessalonians*, in *flaming Fire*, 2 Thes. i. 7, 8. There is no doubt, these two Places signify the same thing, and the same Time; whether *ἀποκαλυπτεται* refers to the Day, or to the Works that shall be revealed. That Day in Scriptures is called *ἀποκαλύψις* and explained by Fire; so that it is plain either way it answers our Purpose.

Moreover, another Mark of this Day is, *ἡμερα θαλασση*, the Day of bringing to Light. This equally points out the Day of the Lord, and the Day of Judgment, as we may see *ἵνα ἀνέλθῃ ὁ Κύριος*. *Et* *quoniam*, *††* *until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden Things of Darknesse, and will make manifest the Counsels of the Heart.* It is to the same purpose, *Rom. ii. 16.*

To these, let us add the Interpretations of the Fathers and others. *Theodore* upon the Place, having explained upon the Materials of Gold; Silver, precious Stones, Wood, Hay, Stubble; adds, \* *The Difference of these Materials, will be tryed not in this, but in a future Life; as he says, (the Day will reveal it) the Day of Judgement will reveal it.* He adds to the following Verse; † *In the Day of the illustrious Ap-*  
*pearing*

\* Τὴν δὲ τῶν ὑλῶν διαφορὰν ἔχῃ ὁ παρὰν εἶος, ἀλλ' ὁ  
 μέλλων, ἐλθόντι τούτῳ γὰρ ἔσται [ἢ γὰρ ἡμεῖς δηλώσω]  
 διὰ τῶν ὁ τῶν ἡρώων. Theod. in loc. 100. 101. 102. 103. 104. 105. 106. 107. 108. 109. 110. 111. 112. 113. 114. 115. 116. 117. 118. 119. 120. 121. 122. 123. 124. 125. 126. 127. 128. 129. 130. 131. 132. 133. 134. 135. 136. 137. 138. 139. 140. 141. 142. 143. 144. 145. 146. 147. 148. 149. 150. 151. 152. 153. 154. 155. 156. 157. 158. 159. 160. 161. 162. 163. 164. 165. 166. 167. 168. 169. 170. 171. 172. 173. 174. 175. 176. 177. 178. 179. 180. 181. 182. 183. 184. 185. 186. 187. 188. 189. 190. 191. 192. 193. 194. 195. 196. 197. 198. 199. 200. 201. 202. 203. 204. 205. 206. 207. 208. 209. 210. 211. 212. 213. 214. 215. 216. 217. 218. 219. 220. 221. 222. 223. 224. 225. 226. 227. 228. 229. 230. 231. 232. 233. 234. 235. 236. 237. 238. 239. 240. 241. 242. 243. 244. 245. 246. 247. 248. 249. 250. 251. 252. 253. 254. 255. 256. 257. 258. 259. 260. 261. 262. 263. 264. 265. 266. 267. 268. 269. 270. 271. 272. 273. 274. 275. 276. 277. 278. 279. 280. 281. 282. 283. 284. 285. 286. 287. 288. 289. 290. 291. 292. 293. 294. 295. 296. 297. 298. 299. 300. 301. 302. 303. 304. 305. 306. 307. 308. 309. 310. 311. 312. 313. 314. 315. 316. 317. 318. 319. 320. 321. 322. 323. 324. 325. 326. 327. 328. 329. 330. 331. 332. 333. 334. 335. 336. 337. 338. 339. 340. 341. 342. 343. 344. 345. 346. 347. 348. 349. 350. 351. 352. 353. 354. 355. 356. 357. 358. 359. 360. 361. 362. 363. 364. 365. 366. 367. 368. 369. 370. 371. 372. 373. 374. 375. 376. 377. 378. 379. 380. 381. 382. 383. 384. 385. 386. 387. 388. 389. 390. 391. 392. 393. 394. 395. 396. 397. 398. 399. 400. 401. 402. 403. 404. 405. 406. 407. 408. 409. 410. 411. 412. 413. 414. 415. 416. 417. 418. 419. 420. 421. 422. 423. 424. 425. 426. 427. 428. 429. 430. 431. 432. 433. 434. 435. 436. 437. 438. 439. 440. 441. 442. 443. 444. 445. 446. 447. 448. 449. 450. 451. 452. 453. 454. 455. 456. 457. 458. 459. 460. 461. 462. 463. 464. 465. 466. 467. 468. 469. 470. 471. 472. 473. 474. 475. 476. 477. 478. 479. 480. 481. 482. 483. 484. 485. 486. 487. 488. 489. 490. 491. 492. 493. 494. 495. 496. 497. 498. 499. 500. 501. 502. 503. 504. 505. 506. 507. 508. 509. 510. 511. 512. 513. 514. 515. 516. 517. 518. 519. 520. 521. 522. 523. 524. 525. 526. 527. 528. 529. 530. 531. 532. 533. 534. 535. 536. 537. 538. 539. 540. 541. 542. 543. 544. 545. 546. 547. 548. 549. 550. 551. 552. 553. 554. 555. 556. 557. 558. 559. 560. 561. 562. 563. 564. 565. 566. 567. 568. 569. 570. 571. 572. 573. 574. 575. 576. 577. 578. 579. 580. 581. 582. 583. 584. 585. 586. 587. 588. 589. 590. 591. 592. 593. 594. 595. 596. 597. 598. 599. 600. 601. 602. 603. 604. 605. 606. 607. 608. 609. 610. 611. 612. 613. 614. 615. 616. 617. 618. 619. 620. 621. 622. 623. 624. 625. 626. 627. 628. 629. 630. 631. 632. 633. 634. 635. 636. 637. 638. 639. 640. 641. 642. 643. 644. 645. 646. 647. 648. 649. 650. 651. 652. 653. 654. 655. 656. 657. 658. 659. 660. 661. 662. 663. 664. 665. 666. 667. 668. 669. 670. 671. 672. 673. 674. 675. 676. 677. 678. 679. 680. 681. 682. 683. 684. 685. 686. 687. 688. 689. 690. 691. 692. 693. 694. 695. 696. 697. 698. 699. 700. 701. 702. 703. 704. 705. 706. 707. 708. 709. 710. 711. 712. 713. 714. 715. 716. 717. 718. 719. 720. 721. 722. 723. 724. 725. 726. 727. 728. 729. 730. 731. 732. 733. 734. 735. 736. 737. 738. 739. 740. 741. 742. 743. 744. 745. 746. 747. 748. 749. 750. 751. 752. 753. 754. 755. 756. 757. 758. 759. 760. 761. 762. 763. 764. 765. 766. 767. 768. 769. 770. 771. 772. 773. 774. 775. 776. 777. 778. 779. 780. 781. 782. 783. 784. 785. 786. 787. 788. 789. 790. 791. 792. 793. 794. 795. 796. 797. 798. 799. 800. 801. 802. 803. 804. 805. 806. 807. 808. 809. 810. 811. 812. 813. 814. 815. 816. 817. 818. 819. 820. 821. 822. 823. 824. 825. 826. 827. 828. 829. 830. 831. 832. 833. 834. 835. 836. 837. 838. 839. 840. 841. 842. 843. 844. 845. 846. 847. 848. 849. 850. 851. 852. 853. 854. 855. 856. 857. 858. 859. 860. 861. 862. 863. 864. 865. 866. 867. 868. 869. 870. 871. 872. 873. 874. 875. 876. 877. 878. 879. 880. 881. 882. 883. 884. 885. 886. 887. 888. 889. 890. 891. 892. 89

† Κατὰ τὴν τῆς ἐκκλησίας τῆς Σοφίας ἡμέραν ἡμετέρας  
 θν. καὶ ἱερατικῆς ἀκριβείας· καὶ τὴν μὲν εὐσεβειολόγαν κα-  
 Μ. π. θ. π. τ.



154 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

pearing of the Lord, there will be an Examination and Enquiry made, and those who have lived well, shall by the Fire be rendered more splendid as Gold and Silver; but those who have done Evil, shall be burnt as Wood, Hay and Stubble. In the same manner, Theophylact upon the place, \* By the Day, is understood the Day of Judgement; every Thing will be revealed by Fire, i. e. the Nature of every Thing will be manifest, whether it be Gold, or otherwise. It is explained in the same manner by Basil, Gregory Nazianzen, and Gregory Nyssen, Jerom, and generally all the Fathers, especially the Greek ones. Lastly, the Latin Version, that follows the Fathers, or some very antient Copy, has expressly the word LORD therein.

So much is sufficient for the word *ἡμέρα*. And as to the other word *πῦρ*, or Fire, when it is once fixed concerning the Signification of the first, and proved to denote the Day of the Lord, there can be very little doubt of the latter, it must be the natural, and material Fire of that Day; and they who will have it to be a Metaphorical and Figurative one, contradict the received Rule of all Commentators; not to recede from the literal Sense of the sacred Writings without necessity. There certainly will be material Fire at that day, when the Heavens will be reserved for Fire; therefore besides this metaphorical Fire, they must have another, and a tedious Repetition three times of the same Metaphor again.

θαύρα χρυσόν, καὶ ἀργύρον, τὸ πῦρ λαμπροτέρως ἀποφανί-  
τες δὲ τῆς κακίας ἰσχυράς δίκην ξύλων, καὶ χόρτου, καὶ  
καλέμνι, κατακαύσει. *ib.*

\* Ἡμέραν μὲν τὴν κρίσεως ὥσιν ἐν πυρὶ δὲ λήγει τὰ ἔ-  
ργα ἀποκαλύπτεισθαι, τυτίσι, ὡς νικᾷ γινώσκεισθαι ὅποια τῆς φ-  
σιν ἴσιν ἄρα χρυσοῖς, ἄρα τὴν ἄγιον. *Theophylact in locum.*

I have



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 155

I have proved the Day and Coming of the Lord, and the true and real Fire to be meant by the Apostle; the greatest Difficulty remains concerning the purging Force of this Fire to reveal every Work, to be the *αρεσκασμὸς καὶ διακριτὸν*, the discerning and exploring Fire. Our past Actions cannot be put into, and bear the Test of this Fire: But the Habits and Dispositions of the Mind, from whence those Actions flow, remain; and the Souls to whom those Affections belong, are more or less affected by this Fire. You may perhaps say, How can Fire act upon Naked Souls, Natures merely spiritual, and not cloathed with any corporeal Substance? For without Body they are not subject to the Force and Action of the Flames. This Objection I am not able to remove, only as the same lies against the eternal Fire, granted by all. †

I shall not interest myself, or lose my time about this matter, and shall remit it to the Repository of the Secrets of the Divine Dispensation: But to give a little more Light into this Affair, and to prove our Assertion \*, we shall consult some other Places in the Scripture, confirming this Notion, and then subjoin the Opinions and Explications of the Fathers thereon.

As to the Scripture, Christ mentions the fiery Purgation, and *John Baptist* the double Baptism of Water and Fire. The Words of Christ are, *Mark*

---

† This material Fire is far from being universally granted; and after the Day of Judgement, when our Souls shall be united to our Bodies, the Hypothesis alters much.

\* *Joh. Erigen. de Prad. c. 19.* says, The Bodies of the Saints shall be changed into an æthereal Quality, not to be touched by Fire, and the Souls of the Wicked will be changed into an Aerial Substance, penetrable by Fire. *Allix* cites this, *de Sang. Christi. p. 68.*



## 156 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

ix. 49. For every one shall be salted with Fire, and every Sacrifice shall be salted with Salt †. Πᾶς γὰρ πυρὶ ἀλισθήσεται καὶ πᾶσα θυσία ἀλὶ ἀλισθήσεται: With others I put the Word καὶ as a comparative Word; as *Mat. vi. 10. John vi. 5. 7.* Christ here speaks of the future State of Mankind, as appears by the Context, and by this referring to a Sort of Probation, or Purification; whereas he says πᾶς πυρὶ ἀλισθήσεται, he joins Fire and Salt together, both which have an absterfive Virtue. Salt stops the Putrefaction in soft and humid Bodies, and Fire softens, melts down, and purifies the most hard, casts off the Rust, and Dross, and Dregs from Metals, and by subduing the stubborn, renders the rest pure and bright. It is the Opinion of some, that these Souls, compared to Metals by the Apostle, are refined in that great Fire, and that every Person acceptable to God, is as it were salted and preserved in Affliction; but the Wicked are to be purged with Fire, and consumed like a Sacrifice. From what has been said, these Words of Christ, though too obscure to found any Doctrine or Conclusion upon, seem to favour this Notion of a future Fire.

I come next to Saint John Baptist's double Baptism of Water and Fire. The Antients would have the World purged two ways, with Water and with Fire. \* *I indeed baptize you with Water unto Repentance, but he that cometh after me——shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with Fire.* These Words do not only respect the Day of Judgement, but they respect likewise the second Coming of Christ, and the

† Πᾶς γὰρ πυρὶ ἀλισθήσεται, τῷ πυρὶ, δοκιμασθήσεται. Ἰσχυρὸς καὶ ὁ Παῦλος λέγει, ὅτι ἐν πυρὶ δοκιμασθήσεται πάντα. *Theoph.* upon the place.

\* *Mat. iii. 11.*



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 157

last Fire, as is plain from the next Verse, *Whose Fan is in his hand—and he will gather his Wheat into the Garner, but he will burn up the Chaff with unquenchable Fire.* Baptism is termed *ἀσπερσμός* *ἡ καθαρισμὸς* *ἡ ἀναγέννησις* *ἡ ἀνακαινισμὸς*: Purgation by Regeneration, and Renovation†; and the Renovation of the World by Fire, with the Greeks is *κατακλιση* and *ἀνακαινισμός*. Purgation is twofold, *ἀσπersion* and *καύσις*, Bathing and Calcification; the Cold Bath is the water of Baptism, and the Calcification is the fiery Baptism. This latter is more efficacious and penetrating than the other; and as the Purgation-water has this force, that Infants are regenerated thereby, by the Operation of the holy Spirit: by the same Spirit the Flames will not have less Virtue. This can hardly be denied; the Holy Spirit descended in cloven Tongues like Fire, which is likewise called Baptism; being as it were a Type of the future Baptism by Fire. The Deluge of Water was a \* Baptism of the World, and the Deluge by Fire will be much more so; it will purge more strongly, and more effectually cast off the sordid Lees; and as God can preserve Bodies from the Power of the Flames, as he did in the Furnace of *Babylon*; so he can preserve the Souls from the extinguishing Fury thereof, or at least those Bodies then to be joined to them.

These Things we have exhausted from the \*\* sacred Scriptures; to corroborate and confirm our Argu-

† Tit. iii. 5. || Act. ii. 3. and i. 5. \* 1 Pet. iii. 21.

\*\* That Saying of Christ, Mat. xii. 32. of Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost being irremissible in this World, and in the next, is variously understood by Commentators; they who take it literally, can mean no other Remission than that, *ἀπὸ καθάρσιος*, by a purging Fire at the End of the World.



## 158 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

ment. The Fathers come into the same, whom I shall interweave in this Discourse. We have already produced *Origen* on our Side, in his 5th Book against *Celsus*, and we have another in his 4th to this purpose; \* *We do not deny this purging Fire will consume, together with the World, all manner of Malice, as we have learned from the Books of the holy Prophets.* The same Doctrine he enlarges upon in his Commentaries, in his 3d Homily upon the 36th Psalm; where he says, the Apostles themselves should undergo this fiery Trial, the Sea of Fire in the Conflagration of the World shall be like the Red-Sea, both for the Good and Bad, the *Egyptians* and *Israelites* to pass through; that one shall pass unhurt, and the others be swallowed up. In his sixth Homily upon *Exodus*, he says the same expressly, and calls this a purging and wasting Fire to come upon all. Likewise in his thirteenth Homily upon *Jeremy*, he repeats the same. He calls this last Fire by another Name, taken from the holy Scriptures; the Baptism of Fire, and the Washing by Fire. And to omit the rest, at the End of the eighth Book of his Commentary upon the Epistle to the † *Romans*, ye has these words; || *Whosoever despises the Word of God, and the Purifica-*

\* Οὐκ ἀρνούμεθα τὸ καθάριστον πῦρ, καὶ τὴν τῷ κόσμῳ οὐρανῶν. ἐπὶ καθάρσει τῆς κακίας, καὶ ἀποκαίνωσι τῶ πάντων λέγοντες παρὰ τῶν Προφητῶν ἐν τῶν ἱερῶν βιβλίων μαμα-  
θημένας.

† The Place in *Origen* is in *Sixtus Senensis*; see the Place, and if he says it is an ineffable Mystery.

|| Qui vero verbi Dei & doctrinæ Evangelicæ purificationes spreverit, tristibus & pœnalibus purificationibus semetipsum reservat .... Hæc vero ipsa purgatio, quæ per pœnam ignis adhibetur, quantis temporibus, quantisque sæculis, de peccatoribus exigit cruciatus, solus scire potest ille, cui Pater omné iudicium tradidit. *Orig. Commen. Ep. ad. Rom. l. 8.*

tions



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 159

tions of the Evangelick Doctrine, shall be reserved himself to sorrowful and penal Purifications. This Purgation by Fire, how many Ages it shall last to torment and punish Sinners, be only known, to whom the Father has given all Judgement. Nor was this only the single Opinion of Origen concerning a fiery Purgation; it was the Opinion of all the Fathers to St. Augustine, and of none more evidently than Lactantius, who expressly teaches the same of both the Just and Unjust. When God shall judge the Just, he shall even examine them with Fire; and those whose Sins in both Number and Weight prevail, shall be burnt in the Flames; and those who have well concocted Fulness and Maturity of Justice and Virtue, shall not perceive the Fire; they have something from God that repels the Fury of the Flames. *Iustos cum judicaverit Deus, etiam igni eos examinabit: tunc quorum peccata, vel pondere, vel numero, prævaluerint, perstringentur igni, atque comburentur: quos autem plena justitia, aut maturitas virtutis incoxerit, ignem illum non sentient: habent enim aliquid in se Dei, quod vim flammæ repellat ac respuat.* Lactant. Divin. Instit. l. 9. c. 20. St. Hilary is as plain, and does not even exempt the blessed Virgin from those Flames: How can that Judgement be to be wished for, in which that intolerable Fire is to be undergone, and the heavy Punishment of expiating the Soul from its Sins; a Sword will go through the Soul of the Blessed Virgin, that the Thoughts of many Hearts may be revealed. If therefore the Blessed Virgin herself is not exempted from this Severity of the Judgement of God, who shall dare to desire to be judged by him? *Quomodo desiderabile potest esse judicium, in quo nobis est ille indefessus ignis obmundus: in quo subeunda sunt gravia illa expiandæ à peccatis animæ supplicia. Beatæ Mariæ animam gladius pertransivit, ut revelentur multorum cordium*



## 160 Of the STATE of the DEAD

dium cogitationes: si ergo in iudicii severitatem capax illa Dei Virgo ventura est, desiderare quis audebit à Deo iudicari? *Hilar. Ps. cxviii.* In *Can. ii.* upon the 3d of *Matthew*; He will baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with Fire: or thus, \* If baptized, he says, with the Holy Ghost, it remains, that they be consumed in the Fire of Judgement.

St. *Ambrose* treading the same Steps, and supported, as he believed, by the Authority of the Scripture, concerning the future Judgement, and the Day of the Lord, speaks in the same manner: Thou hast proved us in the Fire, says *David*, therefore we shall be all proved in the Fire; as *Malachi* says, The Lord shall come, but who may abide his Coming, and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a Refiner's Fire, and he shall sit as a Refiner and Purifier, and he shall purify the Sons of Levi. Therefore the Sons of Levi shall be purged with Fire, *Ezekiel* with Fire, and *Daniel* with Fire, &c. Again, in his Exposition upon *cxviii*th Psalm, All must be tryed by Fire who would return to Paradise, &c. This he says is meant by the Flaming Sword that guards the Entrance of Paradise; and afterwards concludes, \* There-

\* Baptizatis in Spiritu sancto reliquum est, ut consumen-  
tur in igne Iudicii. S. Hil.

† Igne nos examinasti, dicit *David*: ergo omnes igni examinabimur: ut *Malachias* dicit, Ecce venit Dominus omnipotens; & quis sustinebit diem introitus ejus? quoniam ipse introibit, sicut ignis confiatoris: & sedebit confians & purgans, sicut aurum & argentum, & purgabit filios Levi. Igne ergo purgabuntur filii Levi, igne *Ezekiel*, igne *Daniel*. *Amb. in Ps. xxxvi.*

\* Ergo quia examinandi sumus, sic nos agamus, ut iudicio mereamur probari divino: teneamus hic positi humilitatem, ut eum unusquisque vestrum venerit ad Iudicium Dei, ad illos ignes quos transaturi sumus, dicat, vide humilitatem meam & erue me. *Amb. in Psal. cxviii.*

maib

fore



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 161

fore as we are to pass the Trial, let us behave ourselves so as to be worthy of the divine Judgement: Let us preserve in this Situation our Humility, that when every one of us shall come to the Judgement of God, to those Fires we are to pass through, we may say, see my Humility and deliver me.

Basil the Great, of the same Age and Opinion too, declares himself in his first Commentaries upon the first Chapter of Isaiah, when the Prophet speaks of washing Jerusalem with the Spirit of Judgement and the Spirit of Burning, c. iv. v. 4. Basil distinguishes the Baptism of Water, of the Spirit, and of Fire; ἡ ἐν τῷ ὕδατι τῆς ἀπορίας βαπτισμὸς, The Examination by Fire at the Day of Judgement; and adds, ἡ μετὰ τοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ κρίματος καὶ τοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ πυρὸς ἡ ἐκδοκιμασία, With the Spirit of Judgement, and the Spirit of Burning for our Probation by Fire in a future State. He has much more to the same purpose. Moreover upon the ninth Chapter of the said Prophet; Through the Wrath of the Lord, &c. he says, || all earthly Things are to be delivered to the Punishment of Fire, for the Benefit of the Soul. He then subjoins; Non omnimodam interfectionem & exterminium comminatur, sed innuit expurgationem juxta Apostoli sententiam, si cujus opus exarserit, damnatum patietur: ipse autem salvus fiet, sic tamen quasi per ignem. He does not threaten an intire Destruction, and compleat Extermination, but only an Expurgation, according to the Apostle, that if any Man's Work should burn and suffer Damage, he may be saved so as by Fire. See more concerning the Holy Ghost, ch. xv. 29. and upon many other Places on Isaiah, as in ch. vi. p. 172.

---

† Τὸ δὲ πνευματικὸς καὶ πνευματικὸς πρὸς τὸν  
ἐν τῷ μέλλοντι αἰῶνι διὰ τὸ πρὸς δοκιμασίαν. Basil in  
Isai. iv. 4.

|| Δεῖν δὲ τὰ γῆνα τῷ πρὸς τῷ καλῶν παρα-  
δοταί, ἐπὶ αὐτοῖς τῆς ψυχῆς. Basil in Isai. ix. 19.

ch. xi.



## 162 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

ch. xi. p. 224. And, in his *Hexameron* concerning the Creation of the Sun, pag. 61. He says, "That in the Fire to come, the luminous Power is distinct from the burning one: The Lucid Quality is appropriated to the Just, and the Burning Quality is reserved for the Wicked, as, adds he, we have been taught from some secret Fountains of Learning, *οθεν κ' ἐν ταῖς*, &c. \*

Thus far *Basil*. I may add his Collegues, *Gregory Nazianzen*, and *Nyssen*. *Nyssen* is much less upon the Reserve than any; for which Reason *Germanus* Patriarch of *Constantinople*, has wrote an Apology to clear him from this and several Imputations, which we may see in † *Photius*, but all to no purpose: For if we view his Treatise of the Soul, and of the Resurrection, and his Catechetical Oration, c. 8. 26, 35. we may easily come at his Mind. \*

---

\* REMARKS. This Quotation is very improperly deduced from *St. Basil*, to prove the universal Burning of Souls; because it only proves the Burning of some, and the Lighting of others. His separating the two Qualities from the same Subject, and giving them an independent Subsistence, is what, I believe, the good Father hardly understood himself; and therefore he brings the Similitude of the Moon illuminating the Earth, though it is really an opaque Body. This sending Qualities from Bodies upon Errands, is wretched Philosophy; however it by no means affects the Doctor's Argument, and might as well have been left out.

† Cod. 233.

\* In his Oration for the Dead, he has these Words concerning the Purgation of Souls; *Ἦτοι κατὰ τὴν παρῶν ζωὴν διὰ προσευχῆς τε καὶ φιλοσοφίας ἐκαθαροῦνται, ἢ μετὰ τὴν ἐσθύναν μεταρῶσιν διὰ τῆς τῷ καθαρῶν πυρὸς χωνίας*. *Greg. Nyss. Orat. pro Mort.* They are either in this Life by Prayer and Philosophy purged, or after Death by Fire. Nor do I wonder *Nyssen* adhered to *Basil*, whose Writings he looked upon as next to inspired, nor inferiour to those of *Moses*, *Hexamer. p. 2, 3.*

*Nazianzen*



Nazianzen in this Argument, as in others, seem-  
ed very much to taste of *Plato* and *Origen*. I advise  
the Reader to observe Orators and Preachers, when  
they harangue popularly, and when they speak their  
Minds; and this is not to be neglected in reading the  
Fathers; the farther they reced from Popularity, the  
nearer they are to their own inward Way of think-  
ing; consult his Oration 39 and 50. He speaks of  
the baptismal Fire, and doubts of the Eternity of  
Punishments: Lastly, in Oration 26, speaking of  
the Censurers of his Opinion, he says, \* *God knows,*  
*says the divine Apostle, and the Day of Revelation will*  
*reveal, and that last Fire in which we shall be thoroughly*  
*purged.*

St. *Jerome* is accused by *Rufinus* for secretly  
abetting the Opinions of *Origen*, and amongst the  
rest, that the Punishments of the Damned would  
cease after the Purgation of their Iniquity: It's not  
my Business to reconcile *Jerome* and *Rufinus*; but as  
to our Argument, *Jerome* turned and winded sever-  
al ways; and, as I said before, this discovers his  
real Sentiments, when he recedes from the popular  
and vulgar Sense of Things. But to our purpose,  
concerning the purging of Souls at the Day of Judge-  
ment, and finishing the Punishments of Christians;  
besides what he says on Chap. iv. of *Amos*, see his  
Opinion at the End of his Commentaries upon  
*Isaiah* †; *As for the Devil, and all the Wicked, who*

\* Ο Θεός οἶδεν, ποτε ὁ θεὸς Ἀπίστολος, καὶ δολοφονητὴς  
ἢ τῆς ἀποκαλύψεως ἡμετέρας, καὶ τὸ τελευταῖον πῦρ, ὃ πάντα  
κρίνεται, ἢ καθαιρεται τὰ ἡμέτερα, lb. Orat. 26.

† Et sicut Diaboli & omnium negatorum atque impiorum,  
qui dixerunt in corde suo, non est Deus, credimus æterna tor-  
menta; sic peccatorum atque impiorum, & tamen Christiano-  
rum, quorum opera in igne probanda sunt atque purganda,  
moderatam arbitramur, & mistam clementiæ sententiam Judi-  
cis. Hier. Com. in Isai. in fine.



164 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

deny in their Hearts there is a God; we believe they will be eternally tormented; so the Sinners, and wicked Men, who retain still Christianity, and whose Works are proved and purged by Fire, we suppose Clemency will be mixed with the Sentence of the Judge. He advises not to have this Doctrine spread amongst the Vulgar, who would licentiously abuse the same; and as he excepts Dæmons, Atheists, and Apostates, he confirms the former Opinion as to those not excepted, and in this shews he dissents from *Origen*. \*

These are sufficient to observe from the antient Fathers to *Augustine*, in whose Time this Doctrine of the Purgation of Souls in the great Fire at the Last Day, began to degenerate into a specious Purgatory and a fictitious Fire, feigned by these Innovators to receive Souls, and torment them before the Day of Judgement, the Coming of the Lord, and the Conflagration of the World. This we may call a supposititious Purgatory, inasmuch as instead of the true genuine *πυρὸς καθαρῶς*, recorded by the sacred Scriptures and antient Fathers, these Doctors have obtruded another Offspring of their own Brains. The *Ignis addens*, mentioned in the Holy Scriptures, and by the antient Fathers, was to be lighted up at the Day of the Lord, in the Day of Judgement, and at the Conflagration of the World, as we have observed from sufficient Authorities before. The Papists set up their Fire, now at this Day, and will have it to have burnt from the Be-

\* To these *Snicer* (in the Word *Bartholomæus*, p. 630.) adds *Nazianzen* and *Damasceus*; see the Place quoted by him, *lib. 1. em. Pelag. c. 9.* To these add *Casarius* of *Arel*, who says, Some Sins of the Just, at the Resurrection, are to be expiated by Fire. See the Place noted by the Author in B. B. P. P. observed by *Cave*. *Chrysostome* is likewise cited to the same purpose, though the Place does not at this time occur.

ginning



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 165

ginning of the World; as soon as Death entered therein, and sinful Souls first left their desl'd Bodies. But where does this Fire burn? Beyond the Ocean in another Hemisphere, or with us? By what Instinct do the Souls flow to that Place, or what Lictor drives them thither? There is no such prodigious and everlasting Fire upon the Superficies of our Earth, for then its own Light would discover the rising Flame; and if it was in the \* Bowels of the Earth, it would burst through some Cranny thereof, or vomit out its Flames from the Mountains; this is necessary, that it might not be suffocated by its own Smoke and Vapours. In natural Causes, or in what regards the World, Divines often too incurious and unskillful, form rude Opinions and unnatural ones at the same time. Thus these Doctors have made an immense and formidable Flame, but they have neither told us its Origin, nor from whence it is fed, nor in what place it subsists. These Things, say they, the People do not inquire into. And must wise Men take for granted this irrational and fantastical Flame? It is a Degree of Folly, to get only Fools, and to let the more discreet and rational Part go. It is the fault of the *Romish* Religion to accommodate every Thing to the Ignorance of the common People, and to their superstitious Humours. We ought rather to exalt Humane Nature to its proper Pitch, and to bring the People from Folly to a just and due Sense of Things. Humane Wisdom has been growing from its Infancy, and can stand by this time without pious Frands; it is certainly the greatest Prejudice to Piety and Religion, when artful

---

\* The Doctor is pleas'd to be childish here; will not Mount *Ans* answer his Question?

Men,



166 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

Men, led on by Cunning, turn Religion into Gain: Christianity is to be freed from the Shackles of Humane Additions and Inventions; and those Things said in the sacred Scriptures, and adapted to the Understanding of the Vulgar, are so to be explained as not to offer Violence to Truth, nor to Men of Sense. But this by the Bye.

We have said enough concerning the Manner of this supreme Judgement, of the Differences of Punishments, and the Distinctions made of the Good and Bad: For as to that outward *Apparatus*, what is to be performed by the Powers of God and Nature, the Opinions of the Fathers, founded upon Scripture have the greatest Probability of Truth: But as Revelation is not over-clear, and the Light of Nature very defective, this Article of Christian Faith, I take, as to itself, to be plain, though as to the Means it is obscure.

The Signs preceeding this Day, and the Time itself, I have spoken to in my Treatise of the Conflagration of the World; I shall only add, the primitive Christians were a little mistaken in their Calculation of the Time; for they verily believed the Day of the Lord would come in their Age: Sixteen of those Ages have rolled over our Heads, and the Day has not yet shone, nor the Twilight thereof.

This Opinion of the End being at hand, began in the Apostles Days; from thence it ran down for some time to the learned Men, and to the People. \* The first Calculation failing, they every day expected

\* Tertull. de cult. scem. l. 1. c. 9. & ad uxor. l. 1. c. 3. Lactant. l. 7. c. 14. & 25. Ambros. Orat. in obitum Satyri fratr. & c. 9. in Lucæ 21. Chrysost. Hom. 33. in Joh. propo finem. Hieron. Epist. 11. ad Ageruchiam, & l. 4. in Mart. 25. Several

exp  
from  
they  
with  
Opin  
in th  
shou  
was  
come  
Dura  
Chri  
T  
the C  
sayin  
4. un  
he w  
in his  
and  
B  
fians  
the A  
say)  
hence  
and th  
26.  
the N  
Spur  
Times  
25. Sev  
mediate  
they beli  
of Judg  
his Dis  
& Prae  
See 1 7



expected the Coming of the Lord; first, immediately from the Destruction of Jerusalem to later Times, they always kept their Hopes and Expectations within sight: St. Paul and St. Peter witness this Opinion to have prevailed in their Times. St. Paul in the second of *Thess.* c. ii. 1. admonishes that they should not be terrified as though the Day of the Lord was at hand: He says, that first Antichrist must come; but he neither tells us the Time, nor his Duration, only that he shall remain to the Day of Christ.

Those Mockers, in St. Peter, had not reproached the Christians for the slow Coming of their Lord, saying, *Where is the Promise of his Coming?* 2 *Pet.* iii. 4. unless the Christians had frequently given out he was at hand. Nor does the Apostle deny this in his Answer, and ascribes it only to the Mercy and Long-suffering of God.

But why should we wonder at this from Christians of the lower and common Rank, when even the Apostles themselves were (as Commentators say) of the same Opinion; and it is proved from hence, that they call that Age the latter Days, and the End of the World: (2 *Cor.* x. 11. *Heb.* ix. 26. 1 *John* ii. 18.) They use this Argument of the Nearness at hand of the Lord's Coming, as a Spur and an Incitement to the Christians of those Times to Sobriety, Temperance, Patience, Good-

25. Several of the Antients believed the Coming of Christ immediately to follow the Coming of Antichrist, whose Coming they believed at hand; and consequently the other, and the Day of Judgement. Vid. *Terrull.* de Resur. carn. c. 27. *Cyprian* his Disciple, Ep. ad Thibarat. m. 50. & Ep. 58 ad Lucium, & *Præf. ad Fortunat.* de Exhort. Martyrii, and many others: See 1 *John* ii. 18. and 2 *Thess.* ii. 8.

N

works,



## 168 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

works, Charity, and Piety; *Heb. x. 24, 25. 1 Pet. iv. 7, 8. 1 Cor. vii. 29. 2 Pet. iii. 11, 12. Phil. iv. 5.* They even believed these Things could happen so soon as to overtake them alive: This Paul frequently inculcates \*, *1 Thess. iv. 15, 16, 17. 1 Cor. xv. 52.* he believed his mortal Body would be swallowed up in Life, that is, in an immortal and glorified Body: Nay, he desired it; and that he might not be found naked, unclothed of Flesh and Body, in the Day of the Lord.

So far concerning the Apostles, and their Opinion of the speedy Coming of the Lord. But from whence had they it? Certainly from a wrong Understanding of the Words of Christ. The Disciples asked of him the Time of the Destruction of Jerusalem, and of his Coming; and when he had told those Signs, he added, *subito erit tunc Dominus, &c.* † Immediately after the Tribulation of those Days, the Sun shall be darkened, &c. and then shall appear the Sign of the Son of Man in Heaven: And then shall all the Tribes of the Earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of Man Coming in the Clouds of Heaven with Power and great Glory; *Mat. xxiv. 29, 30.*

These Things being taken from the Mouth of Christ, they believed after the Destruction of Jerusalem, and of the Jewish Nation, the Son of Man would come in great Glory in the Clouds; and this Mistake they propagated to their Disciples. Other Sayings of Christ confirmed them more; for he said they should see him come in the Glory of the Fa-

\* See *Gre.* on this Place.

† *2 Cor. v. 3, 4.*

† This Chapter, I have remarked before, the Doctor begins a little too low, and misapplies the Texts; for the Tribulation of those Days, was not the Destruction of Jerusalem, but the Tribulations preceeding the great Dissolution of the World, as the Remarks upon the last Chapter prove.



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 169

ther to Judgement, before some of them tasted Death. And to those Signs he added, \* *Verily I say unto you, this Generation shall not pass till all these Things be fulfilled: Heaven and Earth shall pass away, but my Words shall not pass away.* Lastly, when Peter asked Christ what would be the Fate of John, he answered, *If I will that he stay till I come, what is that to thee?*

From comparing these Passages, I do not wonder the Disciples imbibed the Notion of his sudden Coming to judge the Living and the Dead; nor do I wonder that Providence permitted the Errour to grow, so conducive to Piety, Patience, and a Readiness to die for the sake of God; nor do we wonder that God concealed from his Apostles, what he concealed from even Angels, and from the Son of Man: *But of that Day, and that Hour, knoweth no Man, no not the Angels which are in Heaven, neither the Son, but the Father; Mar. xii. 32.* Or according to St. Matthew, *But my Father only.*

We have proceeded so in Conformity to the literal Account; but if the Nature of the Thing will not bear a literal Interpretation, we must find out a more commodious one. It's plain, however, the Day of Judgement, the Day of the Coming of our Lord, and the End of the World, were unknown to the Apostles: Nor would they bear an Enquiry; for when they asked him concerning the Restoration of Israel, he said unto them, *It is not for you to know the Times or Seasons which the Father hath*

*Mat. xxvi. 17, 18. Mat. xxiv. 34, 35.*

† This is a very odd Notion of Providence, to send Delusions upon the World: Surely the Doctor was got amongst poetical Gods here.

¶ See the Fathers Notions of this Place, in *Guthard, Tom. 20, de Beatijs. Judic. p. 126.*



*put in his own Power*; Acts i. 7. But if we may use a round Calculation, and follow our Conjectures, whereas there are already passed 5000 Years from the Creation of the World, the antient Prophecy received by *Jews*, \* and by the primitive Christians, that the World shall endure 6000 Years, and the Sabbatical to succeed, is not, in my opinion, contrary to the sacred Scriptures, or any other rational Sense. Of this we have treated in another Place. *Theory of the Earth*, l. 3. c. 5. In the mean time it ought to be our Care, that we may be found pure and unblameable in that Day; and that when soever our Examination shall be, we may undergo the same happily, to the Glory of God, and our eternal Happiness.

\* See the History of this Prophecy in *Gerard*, Tom. 9. de Extrem. Judic. p. 127.

## REMARKS.

Our Author has carried a metaphorical Text in the Scripture to a great height; and if we consult the Context, it will appear no more. The Text is 1 Cor. iii. 13. *Every Man's Work shall be made manifest; for the Day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by Fire, and the Fire shall try every Man's Work, of what Sort it is*: From hence the Doctor has prepared a Fire to burn Souls in, and has heaped a great many metaphorical Commentaries of the Fathers after *Origen*; and upon the whole, has made such a dreadful Scene of Christianity, that I defy the most virtuous Man to live with any tolerable degree of Quiet with this Hypothesis.

Whereas, whatever we may grant as to the Conflagration of the World at the Day of Judgement, the Burning of the Souls of good Men, bears too near a Resemblance to that of *Abel*. It was an Abomination to God to make Children pass through the Fire, yet some pontifical Gentlemen shew a strong Inclination to introduce that barbarous Religion into the World again.

*St. Paul*, in this Chapter, takes occasion to upbraid the *Corinthians* for their Divisions and Schisms, that they ranged themselves into Parties, and every spiritual Leader loved to have his

Converts



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 171

Converts called by his own Name: I, saith St. Paul, have planted, Apollos watered, but God has given the Increase: i. e. we are Fellow-Labourers together, and all our working is in vain, if God does not bless and favour our Endeavours: I have laid the Foundation as a wise Master-Builders, and if any of you Pretenders to Parties and Factions, build upon the Foundation I have laid, Gold, Silver, Precious Stones, Wood, Hay, Stubble, of whatever Nature that Work is, the Day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by Fire, and the Fire shall try of what Sort that Work is.

From hence I observe, that this Chapter is pastoral, and the Works mean no more than the ecclesiastical Labours of Ministers in the Church, which at the Last Day shall be tried in so strict a manner, as to resemble Burning.

We must observe, the Apostle begins with a Metaphor; he uses the Metaphor of a Building consumeable by Fire; and to carry on that Metaphor, Fire was a very proper one to use in this Case, to represent the strict Tryal every Preacher of Christianity must undergo, and the Account he must give of the Superstructure, and what he has laid upon the Foundation of the Apostles.

I conclude, that this Text is no more than Part of a Parable on the preceeding Verses; and I shall thus explain it after our blessed Saviour's Method. The wise Master-Builders was the Apostle himself; the Foundation the Christian Religion; the Building thereon, is Continuing the Preaching that Religion. Now if any Man builds upon this Foundation, Gold, Silver, Precious Stones, Wood, Hay, or Stubble, i. e. if upon this Foundation he raises a Superstructure of solid Truths, and valuable Instructions; or on the other side, of frothy and unnecessary Conceits, imaginary Essentials, and erroneous Tenets, and makes Converts thereto; every Man's Superstructure in the great Day shall be tried, and if by an Examination thereof by Fire, which Fire is the Tryal at the Last Day, his Work or Success in his Ministry, shall abide; that is, be approved: He shall have his Reward of a faithful and just Steward of the Mysteries of God: But if his Works shall be burnt, that is, condemned, he shall be saved, yet so as by Fire; if he has any Materials that have stood the Fire, they shall remain, and be placed to his own Account in entering his Demand for his Reward. This is a very mild and easy Explanation of this Chapter, and far from the cruel *Malactian* Interpretation of some Divines, who keep more to the old Heathen Pontifical, than to the Christian one, and retain the antient Taste for bloody Sa-



## 172 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

crifices. This, therefore, is the Difference between polite and ill-digested Learning; the first gives a Spirit to Commentaries, softens the Asperities of Pedantry, and scours off the Rust from every Notion; While, on the other Side, the laborious Pedant labours with his Back to turn over a vast Weight of Learning, to spoil Reason and good Sense, to darken the Attributes of God, to hammer out Predetermination, Hell Fire, purgatorial Flames, and all the melancholy Terrours of Enthusiasm.

When therefore I read the old Prophets, and find the Wrath and Indignation of those Prophecies turned against *Moloch*, and the Valley of *Hinnom*, I cannot be pleased with those Divines who would bring it upon the Stage again: And if all the Fathers of the 5th and 6th Centuries, were joined in their Commentaries to corroborate this Notion, I shall only rank it with the Deliriums of an intoxicated Age. I look upon Fire to be the Material of Priestcraft, and Credulouness the Flame that feeds it.

Surely we may allow Allegories, where the literal Sense would introduce a barbarous Religion, and destroy the Christian Dispensation. I am surprized the Doctor will have Fire to come down from Heaven, and is so sparing of Water from thence for his Deluge.

That the Earth may be burnt at that Day, I can easily grant; and I shall rest for Proof thereof, only upon one Text of Scripture, 2 Pet. iii. 10. *The Elements shall melt with a fervent Heat; the Earth also, and the Works that are therein shall be burnt up.* This is a philosophical and literal Description of the Last Day; and if we consider nearly, this Burning of the Earth will be very probable: For the Earth has its Infancy, Progress, and Decay, as well as Man: The Minerals, the Marrow thereof, in time will waste; the vegetative Juices fail for want of replenishing, and the Stock of Seeds of every Species be exhausted. In this old and withered Condition, the Life and Vivacity thereof being worn out, it will yield little Comfort to Man; the Woods will shake off their Boughs, and cover the Plains only with dry and withered Trunks; the Earth will send forth faintly her Grass, without Verdure to please the Eye, or Strength to nourish Cattle; the Horse will faint beneath his Burden, and seek out in vain for Fountains and Rivers to quench his Thirst. In this universal Decay, if God should let it come so far, Burning is a very regular way of Annihilating an almost useless Globe, whose best Days are over.

They who assert the Eternity of the World, *ex parte ante*, or *postea*, never made a philosophical Enquiry therein; for Mr. *Kell* has observed, that even the Light of the Sun wastes: Part is imprisoned in Plants, and never returns: This in time will



## OF the STATE of the DEAD. 173

will bring upon the Sun a Failure of Light, and upon the Earth, Dimness. The Minerals are laid up in the Bowels of the Earth, the Store-houses of God: When they are dug up, and carried away, and no Matter being left in the hollow Caverns for the mineral Juices to impregnate, there will be no more of them for the Use of Man; so that Time without a Renovation, brings on Necessity and Misery upon the World.

I will therefore lay down two Sorts of Burnings, and leave every Man to take his own Hypothesis; either the Earth shall be entirely consumed, to make Room for a new one to move round the Sun in the same Orbit; or the Superficies thereof only will be consumed, and a new Plantation will arise from the Ashes thereof, by God Almighty; replenishing the Face with a Renovation of every lost and destroyed Species of Plants, Flowers, Trees, and Living Creatures.

An unwise Man does not well consider this, and a Fool knows nothing of the Matter. And these are the Men who say there is no God; for every Thing that vegetates, or has animal Life, existed in the first Parent at the Beginning of the World; all the Race of Mankind were in *Adam* perfectly formed, and when the Species is worn out, no mechanical Operation can form a new one: And therefore the World, in its own Nature, is only durable for a time; and notwithstanding its flourishing Looks, is running the Race of its Decay, and hastening to a Dissolution, as the Rivers run into the Sea. Fermentation is no more than Distension of the Species contained in the Ova; as when you peel an Onion, there are new Rings the further you go, in less Circumference, till you come to the minutest and last Covering of all; so the Ova are the Skins that contain the Species, and by Fermentation that Species is distended, as it is afterwards more by Nourishment till it comes up to a grown Man.

This is wonderful to consider, and to how minute an Origin we owe great Knaves in the World. I conclude, that Burning the Earth is no unphilosophical nor improbable Notion. But when we come to the Burning of Souls, a new Question arises of another Nature: And here the Doctor and I must shake Hands; for though he brings *Origen* to back this fiery Lustration, with the succeeding Commentators, he is so modest as to let the more early and more reputable Fathers alone, though I wonder he missed *Clement's Phoenix*. I have a great Deference for what the first Fathers universally held, because they were nearer at hand to the apostolick Age, and to the Conversation of our blessed Saviour with his Disciples; but no Man will allow *Origen* and his Followers to be a Rule of Faith to us.



## 174 Of the STATE of the DEAD

Then the Fathers produced by him, are so contradictory in their Accounts of this Fire, that nothing sure can be established thereon. All must pass through, says *Origen*; not even the Apostles excepted: So that this Father and our Doctor have only postponed Purgatory, placed it a little lower down than the Papists have done, and added an Absurdity or two more of their own. Now if every Man, even the purest of Men, Martyrs themselves, are to pass through this Fire, and all their Hay and Stubble, i. e. all their Frailties, are to give them the sensible Pain of Burning; with what Peace can they remain in *Hades* before that dreadful Execution comes? Will any Man bear the Test of Burning by the strict Examination of God? How in this Case are we deluded in Scripture with the Promises of Pardon and Peace? How are we mocked with the sweet Prospect of a quiet Grave, our Work is all to do over again? Unhappy Man, compounded of fragile Clay, and to be burnt for being broke!

I speak now of just Men, whose Sins are forgiven, and to whom the Lord imputes no *Unrighteousness*; of the Wicked I have nothing to say, who live and die in an open and professed Rebellion against God; their Crimes are one continual Act of Sin; I leave them to their irreversible Doom.

He quotes *Lactantius*, who in the same Paragraph is against his Hypothesis; for he absolutely denies that Fire can lay hold of Souls, and says the Burning of the Wicked shall be when their Bodies are restored to them: And as to the Flame which is to examine the Just, he speaks of it in a very unintelligible and contradictory manner, if we take him in a literal Sense.

*Hilary* speaks of this Tryal in a different manner from those before; he makes the blessed Virgin obnoxious to the Severity of the Flames; and argues from hence, no Mortal can escape the Torments of that Tryal. *Origen* and *Lactantius* allow better Quarter for the Saints; *Lactantius* says, they shall not feel the Fire, and *Origen* applies it to those who have need of this Fire. Nevertheless, according to the main Argument from the Text of *St. Paul*, no Man can escape it if we take him in a literal Sense, as to that point; for we are all without exception Hay, Stubble, in a greater or less proportion; and according to *St. Hilary* we may very well tremble at that Judgement.

*St. Jerome* on the other Side cools the Flames for the Christians with the Clemency of the Judge, but Flames are Flames still; and he makes the great God of Heaven resemble *Moloch* as to his Punishments, whatever he does as to his Rewards.

Our Doctor does not differ from the Papists in the Reason of the Thing, but only in the manner of Purgatory. They light up the Fire now, and he kindles it at the Great Day;



## Of the STATE of the DEAD 175

he apparelled Christ, and furnishes him out like an Executioner, to come to rack and torment Souls; to extort Secrets from them: Whereas I am far from thinking the Just endure any Torment or any Pain at that Examination. I am therefore entirely averse to that Sort of Divinity which robs Religion of any of its Comforts; no, it is Peace, it casts a comfortable Gleam upon the Soul, makes *Hades* pleasant, and the Thoughts of Judgement refreshing to the Mind. All the Accounts we have of the Examination of that Day, given by our blessed Saviour, suppose no Fire, no Torment to the Righteous; see *Mat. xxv.* When he comes in his Glory, he does not come armed with Terrors to the Just; his Glories are not laid over with the rough Colours of Horror, but with Clemency and Mildness, and his Throne is Righteousness. The Scripture says no more, than that all Nations shall be gathered, and afterwards separated, as Sheep are separated from the Goats, i. e. into two Parts. Now whether this Separation is instantaneous or no, and performed by one Action of the divine Knowledge, is a Question of a mysterious and dark Nature to us. The Particulars that entitled the Sheep to eternal Happiness in general, are recounted in that Chapter; I mean the practical Particulars only are these, Feeding the Hungry, Giving Drink to the Thirsty, Entertaining the Stranger, Cloathing the Naked, Visiting the Sick, and those in Prison. We see these are all practical Duties of Charity to our Neighbour, and are the Tests of eternal Happiness. Nor is it to be supposed every Person had practised these Duties, it was sufficient if God, who knows the Hearts of all Men, saw a Disposition towards them, that ripened not into Action for Want of Opportunity. It is a plain Inference what a dangerous Vice Covetousness is, that with it a Man separates himself for Damnation before that Day; he prepares the very Words for the Lord of Heaven to speak to him, and as it were puts them into his Mouth.

Every Man on the right Side of *Hades*, has a comfortable Assurance of his future State. This makes the Death of the Righteous so far preferable to that of the wicked Man, and, according to the Book of Wisdom, they are in Peace. The Scripture in no Place, except this metaphorical Text, *1 Cor. iii. 13.* applies Fire to the Just, but always makes it an opposite Punishment for the Wicked, *Mat. iii.* the Wheat is separated from the Chaff, and the latter only burnt. This Text is of the utmost Importance to shake off the Doctor's Scheme, and it depends upon this single Criterion, whether by *error*, St. John meant Persons, or their Works; if the latter, this Text must be connected with the first of the *Corinthians* iii, of



# 176 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

III, of purging by Fire; but no Commentator understood it so. *Theophylact* says the Floor was the Church, the Chaff the lighter Members of that Church, and governed by the Spirit of Malice; these he says, shall go into eternal Fire; but the Wheat is the good Sort, who feed others by Example and Exhortation. It is plain from hence, *Theophylact* had no Notion of burning any except the Damned; for he uses this Text as an Argument against *Origen*, who denied the Eternity of Hell Torments, and does not suppose any Torment to touch the rest. And the Doctor cites him upon *Mark ix. 49.* to very little purpose; for he only uses *St. Paul's* Allegory of Fire, as he does of the same in this Chapter of *St. Mark*, which equally proves Souls shall be pickled as burnt. Nor is that Father treated better in being brought in upon *1 Cor. iii.* he is so far from leaving the allegorical Interpretation, that he adheres thereto, and supposes no material Fire to be understood in this Text; and he is cited by the Doctor with a very awkward and partial Turn, for he makes *Theophylact* say, our Works shall be tried by Fire, who says no such thing; who only explains the Allegory; and the Word was so artfully put, that the unwary Reader may take the Word Fire to be in the Explanation, whereas it is only in the Allegory, and taken from the Text. His Words are thus; by DAY he means, the Day of Judgement, by *εσχατι* he means, that our Works should be manifest of what Nature they are, whether Gold or not. This is a very different Air and Sense, and our Doctor needed not to flourish with a *νε αλλος* *Theophylactus in locum*. Nor indeed is *Theodoret* used better by our Doctor, the Allegory of the Text is turned upon the Commentator, who supposes no passing through the Fire; he adheres, in some measure, to my Explanation of the Text, and says, That at the Day of Judgement, the Preacher, after an Examination made, not of his Person, but of his Flock; if they perish, he shall be saved; that shall be the Detriment he shall suffer, *viz.* the Loss of his Flock. † *He was not the Cause of their turning to Evil, for he gave them good Doctrine.*

Καὶ διακαθαρίσθαι τὸν ἄλωνα αὐτοῦ] πῶς τῇ μαλακίᾳ ἥτις πολλοὺς μὲν ἔχει καθαροὺς ἡμιθῦλους—δὲ καὶ αὐτοὶ καὶ οἱ τοῖς πνεύμασι τῆς πονηρίας, κατακτανόμενοι δὲ αὐτοῦ, δὲ ἐν ἡμέρᾳ ἐκείνῃ, ἀφίλωνται, καὶ τῆρουσιν, &c. *Theophil. in loc.*  
 † Οὐ γὰρ αἰτίος τῆς τούτων ἐκτροπῆς τὸ χαῖρον προσηύχων, αὐτοὺς γὰρ τὸν προσηύχοντα διδάσκων, προσηύχων. *Theodoret. in loc.*  
 This



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 177

This lends away the Purgation by Fire, in the Verse of St. Paul, *He shall be saved so as by Fire*; because the Fire is here, the Loss of his Labours by the Destruction of the Persons on whom he laboured for their Salvation; This was the evident Sense of *Theodoret*, who interprets Examination by Fire, to mean a Trial by Loss or Gain, as Gold comes out more Splendid, and Chaff consumes away in the Flames.

Any Man who studies, as well as reads the Fathers, will find this was a constant Method in their Commentaries; they always hunt an Allegory, or a Parable, as a Pack of Hounds hunts a Hare or a Fox; they never leave the Allegory, even in the Explanation; and their Comments are as obscure as the Text. From hence Transubstantiation has got footing in the World. I call it Brooding over a Text till it hatches; a Parable always begets a Parable, and a Metaphor begets a Metaphor, to the End of the Chapter. These Metaphorical Comments are the terrible Aids the Doctor brings in to support his whimsical Hypothesis: Thus St. *Hilary* makes even the blessed Virgin pass through the Fire, to be stabbed with a Sword, and used in a very ill manner, even she who carried in her Womb the Lord of Life. Whereas he means no more than her strict Examination, for even her Imperfections at the last Day.

I conclude, this Way of using the Fathers is unfair, and dangerous at the same time; and we may pick out any Religion we please from their Writings interpreted in this manner. And Purgatory, that gross Belief of a material Fire that possesses the Minds of the common People in Popish Countries, proceeds from a very free and liberal Use of Metaphors; and though the Doctor fights with this Purgatorial Fire, and endeavours to beat it down, the Contest is like Boys kindling up Bonfires, and in the Contention which is the greatest, put out their Neighbours, to make their own seem the best. The Doctor has a very pretty Method of confuting by Questions, without staying for Answers: Where are these Aerial Spirits? What Language do they speak, and have they a Pope or no? Where is this Purgatorial Fire, and where is the Chimney? A very grave Question: Suppose *Mount Atna* is the Chimney, and the *Straits of Gibraltar*, the Gutter that lets in Water to cool the Bodies, hissing with Flames; an Answer of this Nature is very well adapted to the Folly of this Question.

He proceeds next, to charge the Fathers and Apostles with Mistaking the Words of Christ, about his Coming to Judgement, as though it was expected to have been even then at hand. That the Fathers might mistake the Apostles,



## 178 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

gles, I do not wonder: But that the Apostles should mis- take our Blessed Saviour, weakens a great Pillar of Chri- stianity: They that eat with him every day, and heard him talk every hour, could not mistake him in so impor- tant a Point; and for my part, I do not believe it. He quotes *Tertullian, de cultu famularum*, c. 9. applying 1 *Cor.* 2. 11. *They are written for our Admonition, upon whom the Ends of the World are come, to the Day of Judgement: Whereas he says no such thing. We know that Text is taken in various Senses. I have met with it in three Places, in this, and in his fifth Book against Marcion, and against Praxeas; in neither of which he makes this Application. His Word, *Agenda Temperum*, refers to the Apostles Times, that were past. Times of Persecution and Opposition, may very well be called the Straitnesses of the Age, when we have so many Trials to pass through. And upon 1 *Cor.* 2. 11. \* "We are de- " stined by God before the World, and instructed only by " him, to censure, chastise, and correct the World."*

But what Testimonies does our Author bring, that the Apostles were deceived as to that DAY, from Scripture it- self, and their own Words. This is certainly a great Sin upon the Sacred Writ, upon Divine Inspiration, and upon our Rule of Faith. The Apostles had very little Curiosity, and our Saviour very little Clearness in his Expressions. But what are these Texts of Scripture, that would make even *Collins* laugh in his Sleeve? The first is our celebrated Text, 1 *Cor.* 2. 11. already discussed, and turned into ano- ther Stream by *Tertullian*. Then *Heb.* ix. 26. *Now once in the End of the World hath he appeared to put away Sin.  $\Sigma\upsilon\lambda\lambda\omicron\gamma\iota\varsigma \tau\omicron\upsilon\tau\omicron\upsilon\varsigma \alpha\iota\omega\alpha\upsilon\omega\varsigma$* , The End of the World, i. e. the End of the Ido- latrical world, and the Beginning of the Kingdom of Christ.

But to cut this Dispute short, I shall give some evident Reasons, why the Apostle could not believe the End of the World to be at hand.

Our blessed Saviour had two Comings in the Scripture, his Coming to Judgement at the last Day, and his Coming with his Judgements upon the Jews. Therefore when Je- sus said, *John* xxi. 22. *If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me. Then went this Saying abroad a-*

---

\* Nos destinati a Deo ante mundum in estimationem tempo- rum, tanquam castigando & castrando ut (ita dixerim) seculo tradimur a Domino.



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 179

Along the Brethren, that the Disciple should be so. They mistook his Coming, and supposed it to be the Day of Judgement; they believed *Jesus* would be Immortal, and that he only would be preserved for that Coming, to see it in the Flesh, and not to be changed. This Construction is far from believing the Day of Judgement to be at hand, or to be hastening on to complete that Age.

Moreover, the Apostles did not preach *Jesus* as coming to judge the World so soon. *St. Peter* says, *Acts* ii. 39. For the Promise is unto you, and to your Children, and to all that are afar off, (as many as the Lord our God shall call) that is, of your Children, extended to the Lines of many distant Generations.

When the Primitive Christians in the Apostles Days were upbraided with *Christ's* not coming according to his Promise, *St. Peter* did not expect him soon, nor promise him soon, to rise those Insults; but guards against them, by saying, *1 Peter* iii. 8. One Day is with the Lord as a thousand Years, and a thousand Years as one Day. As the Psalmist, *Psalms* xc. 4. speaks retrospectively, *St. Peter* applies it forward for Ages to come, to take off the Objection of our blessed Saviour's not Appearing at that time; he gives him a thousand Years for a Day, which puts it backward long enough to break the Heart and Patience of any Enthusiast in the World, who wants to be cock-a-hoop, and to sit upon the Bench in Judgement.

To conclude, if the Doctor has done Dishonour to the Scriptures, to Christianity, and to the Apostles at one Blow, I have made these short Observations to vindicate all with one Blow more.

### C H A P. VII.

#### *Concerning the Resurrection of the Dead; the State of the Raised, and of their Bodies.*

OUR next is the most important Chapter concerning the Resurrection of the Dead, and the State of the Raised; in which we shall follow our antient Method; We shall first come to the



the Question itself, and proceed next to treat of the Manner thereof, according to the Light we have from the Scriptures, or from the Nature of Things. As to the Thing itself, nothing is more clearly revealed in all the Christian Religion. The Gentiles and the Jews, had a confused Idea of the Resurrection; it was a common Notion with the \* Stoicks and the Platonists, that the World, and Men were to be renewed, and the latter to live over again. This was held, not only by the Greeks, but the Eastern Nations; Egyptians, Chaldeans, Persians, said the same. Concerning the Magians, says † Theopompus in Laertius, *αυαλισσισθαί νάτα τας Μάγας τας ανθρωπους*. That Men were to live over again, according to the Opinion of the Magians.

As to the Jews, Moses taught them nothing in his Law of the Resurrection of the Dead, or the Immortality of the Soul. That these Things were known to Moses, || I do not doubt, and to the wise Men instructed by Moses, and let into his Mysteries. Afterwards this Resurrection was hinted at by the Prophets symbolically, by the lesser Writers more openly, and by \* Daniel was expanded into Light: Though the full shining forth in its strength of this

\* See, The Theory of the Earth, Book 4. Chap. 5.

† In Proemio.

|| They restrained this Resurrection to the Just only, and to the Israelites. Veda Buxtorff, *De Jod. c. 1. p. 31. Gerhard. de Resur. Tom. 8. p. 209. & Daffortus*. They supposed this Resurrection to be Terrestrial, and had no Notion of Coelestial Bodies.

\* Some of the Rabbins supposed they should rise, not only with the same Bodies, but with the same Habits; and in the Land of Canaan, whither the Bodies of all the Israelites were secretly to be conveyed through Caverns of the Earth, if they died in Foreign Countries, or at least from the Bone-Loss, the whole Body should spring out again. See Daffortus, of the Resurrection of the Jews.



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 181

salutary Doctrine was reserved to the Days of the Messiah.

In this therefore we Christians triumph, in this joyful Message of the Conquest of Death and Hell, to be restored to Light, and the Enjoyment of Immortality: not with the Bodies we now carry about us, but with Celestial ones; and not to live in this World, but in the high Expanse of Aether, happy in the Company and Seats of Angels. Lift up therefore your Courage, O ye Christians! Having therefore these Promises (dearly beloved) let us cleanse ourselves from all Filthiness of the Flesh and Spirit, perfecting Holiness in the fear of God; 2 Cor. vii. 1. These things being observed, we must next examine, upon what Testimonies of the Scripture this Hope of the Christians is built.

*First*, Christ himself promised his Disciples, he would perform a Resurrection from the Dead, as Lord of Life and Death; and to shew his Power to raise others, he raised himself. In the first place he asserted the Resurrection against the Sadducees, *Matth. xxii.* and brought his Argument from the *Mosaical Writings*, acknowledged by that Sett of Men to be Canonical and Authentick.

\* He promises his Rewards at the Resurrection of the Just; *iv. τῶν νεκρῶν ὁμοίων*, to those who help the Sick and Needy, and have no Compensation in this Life: † But to his Disciples, and to those who suffered for his sake, he promised so much more great and glorious Things, *τῶν αὐτῶν*, in the Regeneration, or at the Resurrection. He affirms the Empire of Life and Death are his; and that by his Power he can call the Dead from their Graves. In

*Luke xiv. 14.*

*Matth. xix. 28.*



## 182 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

the Beginning of the Revelations, he speaks to St. John, thus; || *I am the first and the last; I am he that liveth and was dead, and behold I am alive for evermore: Amen. And I have the Keys of Hell, and of Death.* And in the Gospel of St. John, \* *And this is the Will of him that sent me; that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, should have eternal Life, and I will raise him up at the last Day.* And to Martha he said; †† *I am the Resurrection and the Life, and he that believes on me, though he were dead, yet shall he live; and whosoever liveth, and believeth on me, shall never die.* You have the same in the fifth Chapter; \* *For as the Father hath Life in himself, so hath he given to the Son to have Life in himself, and has given him Authority to execute Judgement also; because he is the Son of Man. Marvel not at this, for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the Graves shall hear his Voice, and shall come forth; they that have done Good, unto the Resurrection of Life, and they that have done Evil, unto the Resurrection of Damnation.*

We having these things so plainly from the Mouth of Christ, we have no Reason to doubt of the Resurrection. And our Faith is corroborated by seeing the Facts done, and he has given Earnest, and a full Assurance of making his Words and Promises good, by raising, when upon Earth, the Dead from their Graves. This was, I confess, done even by the Prophets; but he raised himself after he was crucified, dead and buried; after he had shaken off the Chains of Death, the third Day he returned to the sacred Reliques of his Body, and breathed into them eternal Life.

In this we Christians boast in the Victory over our last and most potent Enemy, the King of Ter-

|| Rev. i. 17, 18. \* John vi. 40. †† John xi. 25, 26.  
\* John v. 26, 27, 28, 29.

of  
rours  
Mag  
or the  
Proph  
and r  
God,  
and s  
No  
bout  
he kn  
down.  
Day  
I will  
his Bo  
ry Pa  
one.  
same,  
and i  
mand  
them  
in the  
Days  
Thin  
Ange  
Sepul  
not be  
when  
must  
crucifi  
mem  
the f  
He



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 183

roure. Did ever any of the wise Men, the Oriental *Magi*, or the Philosophers of any Nation or Name, or the most famous Legislators, or the most holy Prophets, rise from the Dead; lay down their Lives and resume them again? It was only our Chief, our God, who triumphed over the infernal Regions, and from his Conquest we expect our Freedom.

Nor was this Resurrection of Christ brought about by any Power of which he was not conscious; he knew, and foretold it to others, and to his own. To the *Jews*, he told his Rising the third Day after; \* *Destroy this Temple and in three Days I will raise it up.* But he spake of the Temple of his Body, as the Apostle explaineth it. And this very Passage was brought against him as a criminal one. The Priests and Pharisees remembering the same, begged of *Pilate* to make his Sepulchre fast, and it was done. Moreover when the *Jews* demanded a Sign of his Divine Mission; Christ told them, † *for as Jonas was three Days and three Nights in the Whale's Belly, so shall the Son of Man be three Days and three Nights in the Heart of the Earth.* These Things were evident, and well attested: And the Angels upbraids the Women who came to see the Sepulchre with forgetting these Things; ‖ *He is not here, but is risen; remember how he spake unto you, when he was yet in Galilee, saying, The Son of Man must be delivered into the Hands of sinful Men, and be crucified, and the third Day rise again: And they remembered his Words.* And his Disciples remembered the same.

He does not only prefigure his Death with Signs

---

\* Mark viii. 31. John ii. 19. 21. Matth. xxii. 61. Matth. xxvii. 64. † Matth. xi. 40. ‖ Luke xxiv. 6, 7, 8. John ii. 22.



## 184 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

and Symbols; but he inculcates his Death and Resurrection, and tells it as the Effect of his own Will.

*\*\* No Man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have Power to lay it down, and I have Power to take it again. This Commandment have I received of my Father.* Again, *†† A little While and ye shall not see me, and again, a little While and ye shall see me.* The which he afterwards applies to his Death and Resurrection,

*\* This Power over his own Life, to preserve the same against all Violence, was evident, when he withdrew from his Enemies, struck them with a Stupor at his Presence, and prostrated others on the Ground who came to destroy him. Lastly, At his Transfiguration, upon the holy Mountain, he turned himself into a vital Flame, a lucid Body, and an Angelick Form, or rather Divine one; in which Transfiguration, he proved he had Life in himself, it was in his Power to overcome Death, and swallow up Mortality at his Pleasure.*

Let us moreover add to our Purpose, in this Glorification *Moses and Elias* were brought alive and immortal from Heaven; Pledges and Examples of our future Resurrection; and it was more copiously exhibited at the Resurrection of Christ, when many of the Saints arose from the Dead, and appeared in the City of *Jerusalem* to many.

To conclude, Christ did not only rise from the Dead, but ascended into Heaven after his Victory. He left this World in a triumphal Chariot, a shining Cloud, in the Sight of his Disciples, and in a

*\*\* John x. 18. †† John xvi. 16.*

*\* John viii. 59. Luke iv. 30. John xviii. 6. Matth. xvii. 1. Pet. xvi. 17. Dan. x. 5. 6. Matth. xxvii. 52, 53.*

Company

Com  
Coun  
dwoll  
roes o  
and V  
perfor  
the Li  
in He  
Resur  
immu  
Th  
Resur  
now c  
agree  
diffus  
We m  
is by  
ers, l  
quen  
alcrib  
tation  
Corint

\* Th  
We m  
after C  
gument  
two gr  
Jesus o  
Jesus i  
the Pr  
the De  
sties, g  
to con  
and ere  
was th  
the M  
p. 733



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 185

Company of Angels, and went to his antient Seat, his Country, and to God his Father. This was a true *Amobianic*, inimitable by the *Cæsars*, and antient Heroes of the Nations, celebrated for Worth, Fortitude and Wisdom? and as Christ our Saviour has told and performed these things, both with the Dead, and with the Living, and now reigns with his glorious Body in Heaven; whatever he has taught us of our future Resurrection, we ought to look upon as a firm and immutable Law. \*

The Facts and Sayings of Christ concerning the Resurrection, being thus briefly explained, we shall now come to the Apostolick Doctrine, which, though agreeable to the preceeding, is more copious and diffused, and branched out in several Divisions. We must first observe, the Resurrection of the Dead is by the Apostles never attributed to natural Powers, but to the Divine Influence only, and frequently to that very Christ our Lord, to whom we ascribe that Work. St. Paul in that solemn Dissertation of the Resurrection, in his Epistle to the *Corinthians*, in the Beginning, Middle, and Con-

---

\* This makes way for the Testimonies of the Apostles. We must observe in their Preaching to the *Jews* and *Gentiles*, after Christ was departed from hence, their first, and chief Argument was, *Christ rose from the Dead*: from whence they gained two great Points of the Christian Religion, the Messiahship of Jesus of Nazareth, and the future Resurrection from the Dead. Jesus in his Life by his own Works, and by the Oracles of the Prophets, proved his Mission; by his Resurrection from the Dead, and Ascension into Heaven, in the Sight of his Apostles, gave a new Argument to prove he was the very Messiah, to confirm the Hope of Christians in a future Resurrection, and eternal Life. We find in the *Acts* of the Apostles, this was their great Topick in their Preaching to the World. See the Manner and Order thereof in *Gerhard. Tom. 8. de Resur.* p. 733. c. 16.



## 186 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

clusion, ascribes it to him likewise, makes Christ the Author thereof, and makes it one and the same with our Lord's own Rising from the Dead. Now, if Christ (says he) be preached, that he rose from the Dead, how say some among you, that there is no Resurrection of the Dead? He supposes our Resurrection after that of Christ to have an infallible Consequence. Then on the other side; \* But if there be no Resurrection of the Dead, then is Christ not risen. In the Beginning therefore, he makes the evident Resurrection of Christ a Fundamental of our Resurrection hereafter.

Moreover, he makes Christ the Root of Heavenly Life, and Adam the Root or Principle of Mortality, to whom he makes Christ the *αντιστοιχον*, or opposite Type: † For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive; which he says, is, that he might be made a quickening Spirit, *εις πνευμα ζωοποιον*. And by the same Jesus Christ he insults over Death and Hell, disarmed of all their Terrours: || O Death, where is thy Sting? O Grave where is thy Victory? But Thanks be to God who giveth us the Victory, through our Lord Jesus Christ. He said, before, that Christ ought to reign, till he had put all his Enemies under his Feet, the last Enemy that shall be destroyed is Death. Death can be destroyed by no other Way than by an universal Resurrection from the Dead.

Not only in this Chapter, but in others, as Occasion offers, he builds our Resurrection upon that of Christ, and that by his Resurrection he is constituted Lord of the Living, and of the Dead, and of Judgement after the Resurrection. \*\* Your Life is hid with Christ in God; when Christ, who is our

\* 1 Cor. xv. 13. † 1 Cor. xv. 22. ver. 45. || 1 Cor. xv. 55, 57. \*\* Col. iii. 3, 4.

Life  
Glory  
in He  
our Lo  
that it  
cording  
things

I sho  
this Su  
\* The

Fruits  
his En  
rection  
nally f  
postles  
Eph. i.  
depend  
Spirit

that ra  
that ra

your m  
not wo  
Co-op  
is equi  
visible  
hilatio  
investe  
Souls h

a new  
And t  
upon  
forth,

† Ro  
9 1 P  
v. 26. an  
† The  
him from



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 187

*Life shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in Glory. And to the Philippians, † Our Conversation is in Heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour, our Lord Jesus Christ, who shall change our vile Body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious Body, according to the Working, whereby he is able to subdue all things to himself.*

I should be too copious in producing more upon this Subject, to prove, I say, from Christ our Chief, \* *The first born from the Dead, Col. i. 8. The first Fruits of them that slept, 1 Cor. xv. 20.* I say, from his Energy and Power, all our Hopes of a Resurrection depend; not only from Christ, but originally from God the Father. This Christ and his Apostles often affirm, *Acts ii. 24, 32. Gal. i. 1. Eph. i. 19, 20. 1 Cor. vi. 14. Heb. xiii. 20.* It depends likewise upon the Operations of his Holy Spirit; as *Rom. viii. 11.* But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the Dead, dwell in you; he that raised up Christ from the Dead, shall also quicken your mortal Bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. I do not wonder this Resurrection is ascribed to the mutual Co-operation of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost; it is equivalent to a new Creation, when from an invisible † State, as it were out of Nothing, of Annihilation, innumerable Souls are brought forth, and invested with Bodies of their own Kind. The Souls have a Kind of Renascence, or *παλιγγενεσία* a new Life, a new World, and all Things new. And therefore the Apostle emphatically enlarges upon this extraordinary Power of God, shewed forth, and manifested in this great Work.

---

† *Rom. xiv. 9. Acts xvii. 31. Phil. iii. 20, 21.*

\* *1 Pet. i. 3, 4. 2 Cor. iv. 14. 1 John v. 11, 12. John v. 26. and xvii. 2.*

† The Doctor must be allowed a Metaphor here to excuse him from Heresy and Contradiction at once.



## 188 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

Thus far we have established the Certainty of our Resurrection, and the efficient Causes thereof, upon the Holy Scriptures, and clear Revelation; we must now go upon more obscure Subjects, without the Aids we had before: And first, with the Question proposed by the Apostle; With what Body do we come? *πῶς ὑψιγούνται οἱ νεκροί; ποίῳ δὲ σώματι ἔρχονται;* \* *How are the Dead raised up, and with what Body do they arise?* To answer this more clearly, and to find out the Qualities of the Bodies, with which we are to be cloathed, we must observe what are ascribed to them by the holy Writers; and when we have laid down these, as we find them in the sacred Scriptures, we shall next see what rational Enquiries we can come at, for a more particular Account of their Physical Construction; we must then consult the Nature of Things, when we treat of corporeal Beings, that we may not, for want of Knowledge, add some Absurdity to the sacred Writings.

We shall find an Answer to both from the Scriptures; not only in this Chapter of St. Paul to the *Corinthians*, but wherever the Nature of those Bodies we are to have in Heaven, is explained by Christ and his Apostles. Of these, some are general and indeterminate, others, special and proper Characteristicks, which, if attended, let us into the very Matter and Form of those blessed Bodies. These Marks and Characters we shall divide into two Parts, and allot each for the Discussion of each Question in its order: Whether the Form of the Body will be Organical, or Inorganical, is determined by these four scriptural Characters: It will have no need of Belly or Food, nor of Flesh and Blood, and

\* 1 Cor. xv. 35.

will



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 189

will be ἀχειροποίητον, without Hands, and ἰσαγγελον, of the Nature of Angels \*. These Marks are to be brought to the Test; their Strength, their Significance, and their Power, are to be the Subject of our Examination.

As to the first, concerning which the Apostle speaks; † *Meats for the Belly, and the Belly for Meats; but God shall destroy both it and them.* When shall God destroy them? Not in this Life, therefore in the next; not in this mortal Body, but in the glorious and immortal one. And if the Body shall want a Belly, it will likewise be without Bowels, and without Paunch, and all the inward Appurtenances of that Belly, and the Body will be maimed and imperfect, when the organical Construction is taken away. Moreover, the Parts below the Belly will be taken away likewise, or be entirely useless; concerning which, we shall speak hereafter. Then the Legs, Thighs, and Feet, made for walking upon some firm and solid Pavement, as there is no such thing, and Motion will not be after the manner of walking, but as Angels move; these will be taken away as unnecessary and superfluous.

Moreover, without Food there is no Nourishment, and to this Nourishment many Faculties and Organs are subservient, all to be abolished with our Appetite of Eating: Such are the Organs of Tasting, Chewing, and Swallowing down; Concocting, Sanguification, and Distribution of the Chyle; together with many of the Glands, necessary for Nourishment and Secretion. Who can bear this Mutilation of our organical Bodies? But the Bo-

---

\* So the Doctor is pleased to translate ἰσαγγελος.

† 1 Cor. vi. 13.



190 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

dy must undergo these Changes, if we are right in our Conclusions; and when these Parts are taken away, what shall become of Flesh and Blood, shall be our next Enquiry.

When the Apostle had ended his Discourse concerning the Qualities of the blessed Bodies, he adds at the end; *Now this I say, Brethren, That Flesh and Blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God* \*. They cannot, that is, there is a Sort of Repugnance and Contradiction between the Heavenly State, and the Conditions of Flesh and Blood; and therefore the Soul must assume after the Resurrection a Body *ἀσάρκον καὶ ἀσάρακτον*, without Flesh and Blood.

Perhaps you will say, Flesh and Blood, are not in these Words of the Apostle, to be taken literally, but only in a Mystical and Allegorical Manner; denoting the moral Impurity, Depravity, and Works of the Flesh. I answer, This is asserted *gratis*; and not only so, but is against the received Rule of Commentators, not to recede from the Letter without evident Necessity, proceeding either from the Nature of the Things, or of the Subject: But here is no Necessity presses; the Characters (as we shall hereafter prove) are plainly consonant and consistent with the literal Sense, and the following Words plainly shew, that *Caro* and *Sanguis*, Flesh and Blood, are taken here Physically, and not Morally: For immediately after, follow Corruption and Incorruption. Corruption is always understood Physically, † and by *φθορά* the

\* 1 Cor. xv. 50.

The Vulgar understand the Resurrection one Way, and the Learned Another. See *Orig. diss. apud Hunt. Orig. p. 131. med. τὴν αὐτὴν αὐτοῦ*, as says *Origen* against *Celsus*.

† See *Grotius*, and others.



*Of the STATE of the DEAD.* 191

Apostle means *φθαρτον*, this our corruptible Body, and by Incorruption our incorruptible One.

Perhaps you will endeavour to avoid this another Way, and say, This Flesh and Blood, as it is, cannot inherit the Kingdom of Heaven; but we shall have another Kind of Flesh and Blood at the Resurrection. To answer this, the Apostle no where distinguishes Flesh and Blood into two Kinds, Corruptible and Incorruptible; he mentions several Sorts of Flesh, as of Men, Beasts, Fish, and Birds, and they are all Corruptible; but he no where mentions incorruptible Flesh. And when it was in his way, and the obvious Opportunity before him; he has no where the Distinction of one Flesh being Corruptible, and another Flesh Incorruptible; but on the contrary Side, he supposes all Flesh and Blood Corruptible: And from thence he lays down this universal Proposition, without Limitation or Distinction, that Flesh and Blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God, *i. e.* a Body made up with Flesh and Blood. Corruption in the latter Part of this Verse, and Flesh and Blood in the First, are in equal Opposition to Incorruption, and the Kingdom of God; it is mixing Heaven and Earth, to confound Corruptible and Incorruptible together. In this manner, incorruptible Blood, is a contradiction, as Logicians call it, in the Adjunct; for the Stamina, or standing Principles of Blood, are of a dissoluble Texture and Frame, and upon that Dissolution, follow Corruption and Putrefaction. The same may be said of Flesh, it is only a Coagulation of Blood and Juices. But more of this, when we come to speak of the Blood of Christ, and of his glorious Body.

From what has been said, it plainly follows, according to the Apostle, Flesh and Blood cannot inherit



## 192 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Inherit the Kingdom of Heaven : This must be understood literally and universally, and therefore our Cœlestial and Incorruptible Bodies must be void of Flesh and Blood, and of all the Organs and Parts constituting the same ; if you take these away, the Remainder only will be a dry Skeleton, deprived of all the Ornaments and Apparatus of an organical Body.

Hitherto we have proved from Scripture, the Bodies of Saints in Heaven are not Organical, by parts ; as to the whole, let us consider the Characters affixed thereto. Our Cœlestial Body is by the \* Apostle called, ἀχειροποίητον, and in respect to other Bodies, we are ἰσαγγελοι. As to the first, in that to the *Corinthians*, the Apostle puts a kind of Antithesis, or Comparison between the present Body and the Heavenly one ; we must enquire how to render this word ἀχειροποίητος, if verbally there is no Antithesis : For our present Bodies are not made with Hands, and by no human Art ; they proceed from a liquid Seed, and a little Drop, and increase in Bulk, till they are formed by the Divine Energy, into the admirable Structure and Form they are in, with no Help, no Assistance of Hands!

Secondly, If by ἀχειροποίητον, we understand something not artificial, neither is here the Antithesis preserved ; for our Bodies here are not artificial, but natural in their Original and Increase. In another respect indeed, our Body hath a Sort of artificial Mechanism, it is formed of several Parts of Matter, articulately joined, and coagmented together, that make it a perfect Mechanical, or Organical Fabrick, and therefore is said to be χειροποίητον, made with Hand ; and by the same Analogy, ἀχει-

\* 2 Cor. i. 9. Mark xiv. 58. Heb. ix. 11.

ροποίητος,

ροποίη  
thesis  
present  
an inoi  
express  
in Mar  
ἀχειρο  
dy, the  
to com  
ther a  
Antith  
the He  
follows  
of the  
Tabern  
dy of C  
Hands  
τοποίη  
this B  
from t  
Our  
with  
Childr  
unto A  
to rela  
may do  
ing.  
the Pa  
Angel  
as it i  
Word

• T  
Christ,  
know t



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 103

αἰσχροῦ, is Inorganical. In this manner the Antithesis remains between the two Kinds of Bodies, our present, and our Cælestial ones; and the Blessed have an inorganical Body. This Antithesis, though not expressed in this of the Apostle, yet it is to be found in *Mark* xiv. 58. *ὁὗτος χυροποιῶν* is opposed to *ὁὗτος ἀχυροποιῶν*, and Christ applies both to his own Body, that then subsisting, and the Body afterwards to come: He terms one *χυροποιῶν*, and the other *ἀχυροποιῶν*, and in no other Way can the Antithesis be explained. Lastly, The Apostle to the *Hebrews*, ch. ix. confirms this Explanation; he follows the Similitude of a Tabernacle, as Christ did of the Temple, and calls our Terrestrial Body a Tabernacle or Sanctuary, *χειροποίητον*, and the Body of Christ in Heaven, *ἡχειροποίητος*, not made with Hands: And adds by Way of explaining, *ver. xi. τὰς ἐν, ἡ ταύτης τῆς κτίσεως*, that is to say, not of this Building, but of another Fabrick and Form from the Terrestrial and Organical Body.

Our last Character is taken from our Similitude with Angels. Christ says to the *Sadducees*, The Children of the Resurrection will be *ἰσάγγελοι*, equal unto Angels. This seems indeed at the first view to relate to Marriage and Cohabitation, which it may do, though not exclusively of a more large Meaning. Christ takes occasion from hence to extend the Parallel of Children of the Resurrection with Angels further, and to a more copious Sense, as it is done by \* *St. Luke*, who thus gives us the Words of Christ upon this Head: *But they which shall*

---

\* The Sons of the Resurrection, are the Sons of God, says Christ, *Luke* xx. 36. *ὁὗτοι υἱοὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ*, as Angels are called. I know this Expression of the Sons of God, is applied to holy Men



194 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

shall be counted worthy to obtain that World, and the Resurrection from the Dead, neither marry, nor are given in Marriage; neither can they die any more, for they are equal unto Angels; Luke xx. 35, 36. ἄρα γὰρ ἀποθανόντες οὐκ ἔσονται, ὡς οἱ ἄγγελοι γὰρ οὐκ ἔσονται. From hence it is plain Angels have Bodies, and we shall have such Bodies as Angels have, i. e. inorganical ones\*.

As to the first, if the Equality of the Blessed with Angels is only spiritual, and has no regard to the Body, then our Bodies, after the Resurrection, may be mortal, notwithstanding this Equality: But Christ says, by reason of this Parity, we can never die; this is therefore a corporeal Equality, for we die and are mortal in this or in another Life, in regard only to our Bodies. Moreover, this Immortality and Parity with Angels, of which Christ speaks, are Privileges and Consequences of the Resurrection; for the Immortality of the Soul always was, and nothing accedes over and above that, except the Immortality of the Body: In this respect we shall be equal with Angels; and we should be rather like them before, than after the Resurrection, if they have no Bodies. †

Men in this Life, as they have received the Spirit of Adoption, and certain Hope of future Heaven and Glory: But when it regards a future Life, it denotes the angelick State, according to Christ, in this Place, *Mat. v. 9. John i. 12.*

\* This St. *Augustine* asserts plainly, such shall our Bodies be after the Resurrection as Angels are, *Psal. lxxxvi. 13.* upon these Words, *Thou hast delivered my Soul from the lowest Hell.* And in *Psal. cxlv.* near the Beginning, he calls our celestial Body an angelick One; *Tertullian*, that it is angelified Substance, *lib. 3. contra Marc. c. ult.* *Lactantius*, a Transformation into angelick Similitude, *lib. 7. c. 26.* See more in St. *Augustine* to the same purpose, *Epist. 3. ad Fortunat. Gen. ad Lit. lib. 12. c. 35. lib. 2. c. 17. lib. 3. c. 10.* concerning the Bodies of fallen and not fallen Angels.

† Concerning this, see *Hieronymus Orig. lib. 2. q. 5. f. 8, 9. p. 71.* That

Th  
with  
hence,  
dants  
be the  
superio  
jesty o  
2 The  
Bodies  
sional  
will no  
of Sha  
of Maf  
wherea  
is trans  
suppose  
Light,  
tinguist  
be corp  
are cap  
their E  
rated S  
the oth  
Society  
less the  
Last  
duly w  
the coel  
are emp  
tional  
Desarts  
with th

† Like  
‡ Mat.



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 125

That Angels are Spiritual Substances, and clothed with Bodies peculiar to themselves, is plain from hence, that they are to be the Guards and Attendants of Christ at his glorious Coming; they must be therefore visible and clothed with Bodies of a superiour Rank, to form the Magnificence and Majesty of that celestial Pomp; see *Mat. xxv. 31. 2 Theff. i. 7.* It will not bear, that they assume Bodies for the † Time only, and lay aside that occasional Clothing, when the Show is over; I say, it will not bear, that Christ shall come with a Guard of Shadows, Phantasms, and Thousand Thousands of Masquerade Angels, and Mock Appearances. And whereas it is said in the \* Scriptures, that *Satan is transformed into an Angel of Light*; that Change supposes, he must have some outward Form of Light, some visible Species, by which he is distinguished and known, and whatever it is, it must be corporeal; and as evil Angels, in their Natures, are capable of † Pain and Torment by corporeal Fire, their Fate allotted to them, it is plain these degenerated Spirits have Bodies of their own. And on the other Side, the Saints and Blessed can have no Society or Conversation with the good Angels, unless there is some corporeal Medium for Visibility.

Lastly, let me add, Can any good Understanding, duly weighing the Works of God, believe that all the celestial Regions, and the whole æthereal Space, are empty Voids, and free from all visible and rational Creatures, except a few human Souls? What Desarts and Wilds do we make in Nature, though with the great and good God, the Maker of all

---

† Like a Coronet, I suppose. \* 2 Cor. xi. 14.

‡ *Mat. xxv. 41.*



196 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

Things, there wanted neither Power nor Goodness to fill them up? But if we suppose Angels have Bodies peculiar to themselves, and not organical (for what have Angels to do with Bones, Arteries, Bowels, or Members knit together?) but æthereal and lucid, as some of the Fathers have determined, and has been before observed, and our Bodies will be like theirs\*. From this Hypothesis, God the Creator of the World will have his Honour, and Heaven its proper Inhabitants, Armies of illustrious Beings; and we shall have our Society with Angels, Bodies of the same Nature, and Souls equally immortal†.

Thus we have answered the Question of the Apostle, *ποιῶν ὡς αὐτοὶ ἐξοφίαι*, *With what Body do they come?* which is the first Part, and concerns the Form of our immortal Bodies. We shall come now to the second Part, the Matter and the Qualities thereof.

We must therefore enquire what Manner of Body we shall have in Heaven; concrete, gross, and like our own at this Day; or thin, rare, light, and liquid, like Æther or heavenly Matter. In discussing this Question, we shall use our former Method, and begin with the Character and Marks in the Scriptures. The Body of the Blessed is called by St. Paul, *heavenly, spiritual, powerful, glorious*, and like the glorious Body of Christ: *Heavenly* denotes the Matter with which it is composed; for as our present Bodies are of terrestrial Matter, so our heavenly Bodies shall be composed of heavenly

\* Psal. civ. 4. Archæol. Philos. l. 2. c. 8. † Angels used to shew themselves clothed in a lucid Garment; *vid. Gerhard. Tom. ix. p. 659. ante med.* And whereas they are said by *Jude* to have left their own Habitation, *ver. 6.* this either means their Bodies, or their corporeal Place.

Matter,

Matter  
the Du  
dies o  
be afte  
modifi  
ἀνθρώπων  
ἐκ τῆς  
x. ὁ  
The fir  
is the  
such an  
heavenly  
spect to  
and in  
Christ:  
same M  
must no  
Matter  
Glass  
dreame  
Air, an  
- 2dly  
ua, eit  
ter; an  
or it sig  
pour, c  
Hebrew  
minute  
vital Sp  
to be 1  
than ou  
living S  
of pres



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 197

Matter. And as the Body of *Adam* was made from the Dust and Slime of the Earth, so shall the Bodies of the Children of God, at the Resurrection, be after the Image of Christ, composed of Matter modified after an heavenly manner. *Ὁ ὡς ὁ ἀνθρώπου ἐκ γῆς χοῖρος, ὁ οὕτως ἀνθρώπου ὁ Κυρίου ἐκ οὐρανόθεν ὁ χοῖρος, τοιοῦτος ὁ χοῖρος, καὶ ὁ οὕτως ὁ οὐρανόθεν, τοιοῦτος ὁ οὐρανόθεν, &c.* The first Man is of the Earth earthy, the second Man is the Lord from Heaven; and as is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy; and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. In respect to our Bodies, in this Life, we are alike *Adam*, and in respect to our future Bodies, we are like Christ: But if our heavenly Bodies are to have the same Modifications with this heavenly Matter, we must next enquire what Modifications this heavenly Matter has. I answer, it is not hard or solid, as Glass or Crystal, or Ice, as some of the Antients dreamed; but it is pure and rarefied, as *Æther*, or Air, and so will our celestial Bodies be.

2dly, It is called *Spiritual*; *τὸ πνευματικόν*, or *πνεῦμα*, either signifies something void of all Sort of Matter; and in this Sense it is congruous to no Body: or it signifies a light, thin Matter, like Wind, Vapour, or Air; in which Sense *πνι*, is used by the *Hebrews*, and *Spiritus* by the *Latins*. And as the minute Particles of our Blood are called animal or vital Spirits, in that Sense our celestial Body is said to be spiritual, as that Sort of Body is more lively than our mortal one; and Man being then made a living Spirit, *ὁ πνευματικὸς ἄνθρωπος*, has the Faculty of preserving his Body without Victuals, Drink,

---

\* 1 Cor. xv. 47, 48. 1 Cor. v. 1, 2.

Sleep,



## 198 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Sleep, and the other craving Necessities of the animal carnal Body of *Adam*.

3dly, It is called powerful, active, *corpulent & elástica*, it is *seem in Weakness*, i. e. a mere Carcase without Life and Motion; *by itself & outward*, it is *raised in Power*. The Power of a Body consists in Motion, or in moving it self and other Bodies; the Celerity with which it is moved from one Place to another, is Agility; the Faculty of imparting Motion, is Power; the Parts of Matter cohering together, and in the State of Quiescence, have no Power of moving themselves; for Motion in Bodies is generated by Motion, or by a Body moved: Therefore to Agility of Body, is required Motion of the Parts, as in Air, Wind, Flame, and Light. It is true, hard and elastick\* Bodies resist Compression, and recover their natural Situation again: But this Motion does not proceed from the Body it self, but from a subtle Matter in the Pores thereof. Moreover, in the firmest and most solid Machines, compounded likewise with fluid and volatile Parts, those fluid and volatile ones move the whole Mass of the ponderous Machine, or Part thereof, as we may see in the Motion of our own Bodies, or Members; for if there are no agile Parts of Matter, either belonging, or in the Machine, all will be quiet, dead, and still, without some external Force to move the same.

If we are so far right, and our Bodies in Heaven are endued with Motion, the Particles must not be torpid or unactive, as our present concrete Bodies are; but light, vivid, volatile, and already

---

\* The Doctor is a little out in his Notion of Elasticity, because it makes subtle Matters in *infinitum*.

with



and  
at  
scale  
it is  
Mo-  
the  
e to  
tion,  
her,  
nov-  
ated  
gilli-  
as in  
and  
their  
not  
ble  
the  
like  
and  
nde-  
e in  
for  
be-  
niet,  
e to  
Hea-  
must  
rete  
eady  
be-  
with



With  
easily  
dense  
Irresist  
tion,  
overt  
I w  
direct  
sure ;  
Mind  
Nerv  
as the  
ly a O  
of Ma  
Mind  
glorifi  
I sh  
glorious  
Propo  
ted on  
thoug  
rious,  
of Lip  
the sa  
Motion  
nervous  
how h  
Body,  
and the  
for Dis  
† T  
der, m  
|| By  
in large  
Experim  
ybold



With that Motion to attend the Laws of the Mind, easily transferrable, pervading, rarefying, and condensing. Lastly, The Force of these Particles is irresistible; and according to their Line of Direction, like Wind and Lightning; they penetrate and overthrow all in their Way \*.

I would not have it seem strange, that the Soul directs these spiritual Parts according to its Pleasure; for even in this gross Body of ours, the Mind commands the Spirits to flow into the Nerves and Muscles, according to its Will: And as the whole spiritual Body, το πνευματικόν, is only a Congeries of Spirits, and the most noble Parts of Matter, it is agreeable to Reason, to give the Mind a full Power of directing the Spirits in a glorified State ||.

I shall come now to the fourth Character, the glorious Body: This signifies more than Beauty or Proportion of Parts, it must be something irradiated or shining; for in no other manner can a Body, though even regular in its Form, be said to be glorious, unless illuminated and adorned with Rays of Light. Moreover, the Word δόξα, Glory, in the sacred Writings, when said of natural Bodies,

\* Our Doctor is very unphilosophical here; for humane Motion, directed by the Will, is a quick Circulation of the nervous Juices, even more quick than Lightning it self. But how he makes organical Motion proceed from an inorganical Body, I cannot tell. He ought to consider the Spirits may move, and the Bodies lie still; he will therefore find it hard to account for Direction of Motion, without making the Body organical.

† The Doctor did not consider, that one Nerve out of Order, makes a Stand to all the Powers of the Will.

|| By the same Rule, Water may flow in the same manner in large Tubes as in capillary ones, which is against Fact and Experiment.



200 *Of the State of the Dead.*

or of even divine and angelick Appearances, denotes Irradiation, or Shining, as we shall soon make appear. Moreover, we find in this Chapter the Glory of the Stars compared with the Glory of our celestial Bodies, in 40, 41, 42. Lastly, The Prophet Daniel, in setting forth the State of the Just after the Resurrection, brings in the Stars to illustrate the same; *And many of them that sleep in the Dust of the Earth, shall awake, some to everlasting Life, and some to Shame and everlasting Contempt; and they that be wise shall shine as the Brightness of the Firmament, and they that turn many unto Righteousness, as the Stars for ever and ever;* Dan. xii. 2, 3. Christ sets off that State, and the Glory thereof, in the same manner; *Then shall the Righteous shine forth as the Sun in the Kingdom of their Father,* Mat. xiii. 43. It is plain that Christ, the Prophet, and our Apostle, have painted forth this Glory in the same Colours, and that it is the Glory and the Participation of Light.

Another Question arises, Whether this Light is in the glorified Bodies themselves, or is reflected from without, as from Jewels polished Metals, and other hard Surfaces. This may be determined by the Parallels laid down of the \* Sun and Stars, and shall be more fully discussed in the next Character, by which our Bodies are said to be like the glorious Body of Christ; and therefore we must lay it down as a certain Rule, the Bodies of the Just are lucid, shining, and glorious.

We come now to our last Character or Mark, the Likeness of our heavenly Body to the glorious

\* The Sun and fixed Stars shine by their own Light, and the Planets by Reflection; and therefore this proves nothing.

Body

Body  
One, a  
of the  
rains a  
was up  
not wh  
forth  
around  
Glory  
After  
Form,  
16. and  
accordin  
the Doc  
House  
and, yet  
Disciples  
which-h  
his Body  
or contra

Phil. 1  
of 11 Clem  
substituted by  
with whom  
wife of his  
Vision. On  
drank, and  
confirm the  
on, he affir  
tered the H  
the Breakin  
Pious; six



# Of the STATE of the DEAD. 201

Body of Christ \*. This Mark confirms the foregoing One, and shews that Light is inherent in the Bodies of the Saints in Heaven, and they are the Fountains and Beginnings of that Light. When Christ was upon Earth, he transfigured himself into Light, not with any borrowed or reflected Light, but sent forth that Virtue inherent in himself, that cast around his Body, Countenance, and Habit, the Glory of that Shining. *Ελαμψε το προσωπον αυτου ος ο ηλιος, και τα ιματια αυτου ηγινωτο λευκα ος το φως.* And his Face did shine as the Sun, and his Raiment was white as the Light.

After his Resurrection he appeared in another Form, *Mark xvi. 5. John xx. 15. xxi. 4. Luke xxiv. 16.* and made himself either visible or invisible, according to his pleasure. *Luke xxiv. 21.* And after the Doors were shut, he twice entered into the House where his Disciples were; *John xx. 19, 26.* and yet he appeared with Bones and Flesh to his Disciples, to confirm them in his Resurrection ||. By which he plainly shewed, he could either diffuse his Body into a volatile and expanded Substance, or contract it into a gross and concrete one.

Lastly,

*Phil. iii. 21. 1 Cor. xv. 48, 49. 1 Matt. xviii. 2.*

|| *Clem. Alexandrin. Strom. 6. p. 649.* *1 Tim. vi. 16.* He did not eat for the sake of his Body, which was subsisted by an Independent Power and Virtue, but for those with whom he conversed, that they might not think otherwise of him, as some suspected he was only a Phantasm or Vision. *Orig. apud Hieron. in Prohem. ad lib. 18. in Isa.* He eat, drank, and put on Apparell, offered himself to be handled, to confirm the wavering Apostles in the Truth of his Resurrection; he assumed the Figure of an aerial and spiritual Body, entered the House when the Doors were shut, and vanished at the Breaking of Bread. This *Demissemus* says he did *1 Tim. vi. 16.*

*φύσις, σικονιδας, 29. 1 Tim. vi. 16. 1 Tim. vi. 16.*



Lastly, When he ascended into Heaven, his Body was carried up on Wings as Angels are; it was the Vehicle, light and moveable, as the fiery Chariot in which *Eliar* made his way to the heavenly Regions. Likewise when he was seen by *St. John* in *Patmos*, His Eyes were as a Flame of Fire, and his Feet like unto fine Brass, as if they burned in a Furnace; *Rev. i. 14, 15.* in the same manner as the Son of Man was seen by *Daniel*, *ch. x. 5, 6.* And when he returns, it will be in the same lucid, flameous, and glorious Form, to make himself visible to us below from the *Æther*, both by Day and Night. This is the Glory of the Father in which he will be invested; the very lucid Form of the Antient of Days, described by *Daniel vii. 9, 10.* with his flaming and shining Apparel.

To this let me add, this Glory of God is called by the *Hebrews Shechinah*, and is the Majestick Presence of God, and has the Form of Light,

not according to his Nature, but to confirm the Truth  
of his Resurrection, *Damas. de Origen. Tric. l. 4. c. 7.*

We find others cited upon this Head, as *Theophyl.* in *cap. 24. Luca.* & *Beda* in *cap. 20. Johan. apud Gerhard.* *Tom. 9. p. 672. Med. Chrysoft.* *Hom. 87. Cod. Gr. in Johan. c. 19.* & *ΕΙΣ ΤΗΝ ΣΙΝΑ ΠΡΟΣΦΩΝ, ΠΥΡ, &c.* It was worthy of doubt, how an incorruptible Body could take the Impression of the Nails, and be touched by mortal Hands; But let not this disturb you too much; this was from Permission (or Condescension, *αυτοκαταβασίς*) for the Body could pervade the Doors, was so light as to have no manner of Opacitude, but the Appearance gave credit to the Resurrection; *St. August. de Cris. Dei, lib. 22. cap. 19.* The Spirituality of the Body of Christ when he arose, was rather hid from his Disciples than taken away, for it avoided all humane Sight; and when he was to be known to them, he would not be touched; *John xx. 17.* because he was not in a tangible or palpable State, as he was before, being risen from the Dead, and about to ascend to the Father.

## Flame,

Flame,  
Journey  
This G  
shining  
5. 2 P  
both T  
repres  
the Sch  
the Bo  
of Hol  
cred W  
From  
glorious  
or liqui  
to be o  
thereto  
*Celsus*, I  
Matter  
real Re  
liquid :  
Beings,  
Light a  
rious B  
formed  
better,  
It ma  
the fact  
glorious  
if it did  
Flesh a  
Body in  
thought  
of the J  
Christ.  
another  
Synod,



Flame, or a candescent Cloud, as appeared in the Journey from *Egypt*, and in the Holy of Holies. This Glory of God is likewise called a Light, or shining Cloud, *Numb. xii. 5, 16, 42. Mat. xviii. 5, 2 Pet. i. 17.* In these and many other Places in both Testaments, the glorious Presence of God is represented as a flaming shining Matter. This was the *Schechinah* of the divine Glory, the Habitation, the Body of Christ, and which shined in the Holy of Holies, and is frequently alluded to by the sacred Writers, *John i. 14. Heb. ix. 14. Rev. xxi. 3.*

From what has been said, it is plain, that the glorious Body of Christ in Heaven is like a Flame or liquid *Æther*, and therefore our own Bodies are to be of the same Matter, as they are to be like thereto; and if we consult Reason, (see *Orig. against Celsus*, l. 3. m. p. 136.) and Philosophy, no other Matter can subsist in Heaven, or in those *Æther* real Regions, where the whole Matter is thin and liquid: And as, in the whole Course of material Beings, we know nothing more glorious than Light and Flame, of these therefore must the glorious Body of Christ consist, and ours must be formed after that Model, while there is nothing better, as we may reasonably judge.

It may perhaps be said, it does not contradict the sacred Scriptures nor Reason, to explain the glorious Body of Christ in Heaven in this manner, if it did not oppose the received Doctrine of the Flesh and Blood of Christ, remaining even in his Body in Heaven. I answer, some of the Fathers thought otherwise; and others very much doubted of the Flesh and Blood of this celestial Body of Christ. The *Origenists* denied it, and argued after another manner. The Fathers of the second *Nicene* Synod, amongst other Definitions and Heads of



## 204 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

the \* Council of Constantinople, (i. e. of the Iconoclasts) by them approved, & this was one, That Christ sits with his Father, and will return hither again; *ὁ ἰς τὴν οὐρανὸν ἀναβὰς, καὶ ἀπομείλει ὁ, not Flesh,* though not without Body, consisting of a subtle and thin Matter; That he may be seen, and may be God, without Crassitude of Flesh. What can be plainer; And these very Words, *ὁ ἰς τὴν οὐρανὸν ἀναβὰς, καὶ ἀπομείλει ὁ,* that relate directly to our Argument, are Gregory Nazianzen's own, speaking of this very Matter: In his 40th Oration, at the End he has this concerning Christ; *ὁ ἀναβὰς τὴν οὐρανὸν ἀναβὰς, καὶ ἀπομείλει ὁ, &c.* The third Day he was restored to Life, and ascended into Heaven, and from thence being to return in a glorious and illustrious manner, he is to judge the Living and the Dead, *ὁ ἰς τὴν οὐρανὸν ἀναβὰς, καὶ ἀπομείλει ὁ, no longer Flesh,* not yet without Body; being to have a more divine and noble One, which he only knows; that he may be visible, and remain a God void of all Grossness and Heap of Matter. Tertio demum die ad vitam rediisse, atque ad oculos adscendisse: ac denique gloriosum & illustrem rediturum, ut de vivis & mortuis iudicium ferat, *ὁ ἰς τὴν οὐρανὸν ἀναβὰς, καὶ ἀπομείλει ὁ,* while there is nothing

*ὁ ἰς τὴν οὐρανὸν ἀναβὰς, καὶ ἀπομείλει ὁ, &c.* Si quis non confessus fuerit Dominum nostrum Iesum Christum, post assumptionem animæ rationalis & intellectualis carnis, simul sedere cum Deo Patre, atque in quædam natus venturum cum paternâ maiestate, iudicaturum vivos & mortuos, non amplius quidem carnem, neque incorporeum tamen: ut videatur ab his à quibus compunctus est, & maneat Deus extra Crassitudinem carnis, anathema sit.

ὁ Μάρτυρ τῆς ἀληθείας, &c. So far they are right, and think agreeably with the Tradition of the Fathers; or rather by asserting their own proper Opinions, they procure due Praise and Glory to themselves. So they spoke from Epiphanius; *Vid. Labbe Conc. Nic. 2. Act. vi. Tom. 6. p. 541.*

ἀσώματος

Of  
ἀσώματος  
men v  
corpus  
ab his  
omnis  
In  
bour,  
taphor  
Substan  
firmite  
But  
Council  
Deus e  
main m  
That G  
Heap o  
that Fl  
nal Ser  
subtile  
is deny  
ven, b  
Last  
doubt  
Answ  
propos  
of the  
ments  
Iwered  
there v

• Fide  
guine  
quia sp  
Non erg  
cere; &



non amplius quidem carnem, nec tamen vacantem corpore; sed augustius diviniusque corpus habentem: qualemque ipse solus novit: ut & ab his, a quibus compunctus est, videatur, & Deus omnis molis & crassitudinis expertus maneat.

In vain do the Doctors of the Pontificate labour, to turn these Words *ἐκ τῆς σαρκὸς*, into a metaphorical, or figurative Sense, to signify not the Substance of the Flesh, but its Affections and Infirmities.

But the very Words that follow in the said Councils, and in *Gregory Nazianzen*, *Ut maneat Deus extra crassitudinem carnis*, *That God may remain without the Grossness of Flesh*: And in the other, *That God may be void of Grossness, and of being in Heap of Matter*: I say, these Words plainly shew, that Flesh is here understood in a Physical and Carnal Sense; and that it is specifically opposed to subtile and liquid Matter; and in that Sense, Flesh is denied to belong to the Body of Christ in Heaven, by the Suffrages of two Councils.

Lastly, I have observed, some of the Fathers are doubtful as to this Head: This is plain, from the Answer of *St. Augustine* to *Consentius*, who had proposed this Question, to him, Whether the Body of the Lord has Bones and Blood, and the Lineaments of Flesh? To which Question, when he answered in part, he adds, \* Let there be Faith, and there will be no Question, unless it be concerning Blood;

---

\* Fides adde, & nulla questio remanebit: nisi forte de sanguine requirendum est: quis cum disisset, pulpare & videre, quia spiritus carnem & ossa non habet, non addidit sanguinem. Non ergo & nos addamus inquirere, quod ille non addidit dicere; & de compendio, si placet, finita est questio: fortassis enim



206 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

Blood; because when he said, feel and see, for Spirit hath not Flesh and Bones, he did not say Blood; let us not therefore add an inquiry into what he did not say before, and so let the Question end; because from hence some impertinent Querist may carry the Question further, if Blood, why not Phlegm, or yellow and black Choler, with which Humours, Phylick teaches us, Bodies are tempered? But whatever is added, let them take care that Corruption is not made a Part, and by that means, even our Faith may be tarnished and spoiled.

We see here *Augustin* is dubious, and cautious; *Consentius* willing to learn, yet doubtful too. Some indeed speak more grossly, and with greater Freedom of the glorious Body of Christ; but having set one against the other, let us proceed with our Argument, for whatever the Fathers and Councils have said, must give way to the Scriptures, and to Reason.

Secondly, I say, and repeat it in the Words of the Apostle; \* *That Flesh and Blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God.* If these Words are taken literally, and in their proper Sense, *κατακληρώνω* the Dispute is at an end; and that this ought to be taken so, according to the received Laws of Interpreters, we have proved before.

Thirdly, It is contrary to Reason, and the Nature of Things, for Flesh and Blood to be Incor-

enim accepta occasione sanguinis, urgebit nos molestior per-  
seruator, & dicet, si sanguis, cur non & pituita? cur non &  
fel flavum & fel nigrum? quibus quatuor humoribus naturam  
carnis temperari etiam Medicinæ disciplina testatur: sed quodli-  
bet quisque addat, corruptionem addere caveat, ne suæ fidei sa-  
nitatem castitatemque corrumpat. *Aug. Ep. 146.*

*1 Cor. xv. 50.* *Corruptible;*



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 107

ruptible; as the Body of Christ is now, so will our Body be in Heaven. Perhaps you will say, they are not incorruptible, but are made so, retaining their own specifick Nature. This I deny, and to prevent any Deceit in general, I shall discuss this Question as plainly as I can. Every Kind of Body has its Properties, some are accidental and mutable, others essential and immutable; which taken away, put an end to the Existence of the Genus and Nature of that Body, and turn it into another Class and Order of Bodies: For example, when the Herbs we eat are turned into Flesh and Blood; notwithstanding the Matter remains, they are no longer Herbs, but of another Nature, even Flesh and Blood. When Bodies likewise consisting of Flesh and Blood are converted into Herbs and Grass, as may happen if the Ground is fattened and enriched with Blood and carcases: those Bodies cease to be Flesh and Blood. When Christ, at the Marriage in *Cana*, turned Water into Wine; the Matter remained modified in another manner, and in this Modification, lost its Name and Nature.

Tell therefore, without any more playing about the Question, what Manner of Change must there be in the Particles of Flesh and Blood, to render them, from corruptible Matter, incorruptible Parts, without losing the Nature of Flesh and Blood; or if you please, explain what Qualities and Conditions of Flesh and Blood are essential and inseparable thereto, and which taken away, destroy the Nature thereof, and make Flesh and Blood to remain no more, but substitute another Body instead thereof. If you confess your Ignorance, you confess at the same time your Rashness, in asserting what you know not. Let us try if we can bring out the Truth another way. Explain what are the Principles



## 208 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

Principles and Stamina of the Blood. The received Principles of the Blood, are Salt, Sulphur, Spirit, Water and Earth; let them be these, or any other, provided they are determined terrestrial ones, are these Principles in the Coelestial Blood? Do you imagine the Body of Christ in Heaven is composed of Salt, Sulphur, Water, and Earth? unless these fundamental Principles or Stamina remain, the Heavenly Blood can only be called equivocally *καταχρηστικῶς*, Blood; it has not the Substance of Blood; for then it could not be a Coelestial and incorruptible Body.

We are to observe, that having considered the Matter constituting the Blood, we must likewise reflect the Form consists in a due Mixture, and Texture of the Parts of those Principles; but all Mixtures and Textures are in their own nature dissolvable and subject to Dissipation, (as Wood and Straw by Fire) by the circumambient coelestial Matter. Indeed the Power of God can preserve the Mass of Blood entire, as the Bodies of Children were preserved in the Furnace of *Babylon*; but still it will be corruptible in its own Nature, if it has the same Elements that constitute our Blood.

The same may be said of Flesh, in a certain proportion; it is to no purpose to draw over this Subject again, or to form the Analysis; it is sufficient to observe, that Corruption even attends Softness and Humidity; and if the Matter is dry and hard, it will have the Nature of a Stone, or of Glass, or of a Mummy dried and hardened in the *Arabian* or *Egyptian* Sands: But as these Things are contrary to Reason and to Faith, I leave them.

In the mean time, we conclude, the glorious Body of Christ in Heaven does not consist of a Fabrick of Bones, Flesh, and Blood, and other Humours and Entrails of a terrestrial and modern Body;

Body  
ter or  
on; i  
stance  
ry of  
but w  
and v  
by th  
Christ  
ven.  
him  
ning,  
re 82  
round  
Earth  
Body  
Sun  
xxii.  
T  
State  
confe  
Who  
Temp  
Worl  
did n  
lived  
x, a  
ble,  
visibl  
is no  
Matter  
think  
er of  
Body  
ten t  
say,



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 209

Body; but is compounded of a more excellent Matter of another Kind of Nature, Purity, and Perfection; in one word of a celestial Matter, as to Substance and Accidents. The external and visible Glory of this Body is shining not with borrowed Rays, but with its own Light, in its own innate strength and vigour, as a Fountain of living Water, and not by the Weakness of Reflection and Transmission. Christ gave us a Specimen of this Glory from Heaven, when he spake to *Saul*, blinded and prostrated him with the strength of his Rays like Lightning, *Acts ix. 3, 4.* περιέλαμψε αὐτὸν ὥς ἀπὸ τοῦ ὀφθαλμοῦ καὶ πᾶν ἐπερὶ τὴν γῆν; *And there shined round about him a Light from Heaven, and he fell to the Earth.* A Light was diffused over the glorious Body of Christ, more strong and bright than the Sun at Noon-Day. Compare *Acts ix.* with *Acts xxii.* and *Acts xxvi.*

This therefore seems to me the proper Habit and State of the glorious Body of Christ; though we must confess it was always in his Power to change the Whole, or Part of his Body into what Form and Temperament he pleased. When he lived in this World, he walked upon the Water, and the Waves did not give way to his light Body: Forty Days he lived without Victuals, and without Drink, ἄσπιτος καὶ ἀποτος, who could make his Body ἀπαθής, impassible, or rare, dense, heavy, light, bright, or opaque, visible or invisible, at his pleasure; and surely he is now more able in Heaven to turn the obsequious Matter into Blood, or any other Concretion he thinks fit. We do not therefore dispute the Power of Christ over the Elements, or over his own Body; but we insist upon his proper Form, so often termed Glorious and Celestial. This is not, I say, bony, fleshy, or bloody, but of liquid Light, beset



## 210 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

beset with spangling Stars suitable to his Dignity, and the Æthereal Regions where Christ resides.

I have explained with as much perspicuity and brevity as I could, upon the Matter and Form of Christ's Body in Heaven, and of our Bodies being made, by his Divine Power, like unto his. Both we have proved, upon Examination, to be Inorganical and Uncompounded: And though in this Examination, we have strictly adhered to the Marks and Characters set up in the sacred Scriptures, we are nevertheless so used to our gross Bodies, fabricated with Flesh and Blood, and solid Members, that we can neither have an Idea of any other animated Bodies, or believe the Proofs when they are evidently brought; whoever is moderately versed in the Writings of the antient Philosophers, or have read the Reasonings of the Christian Fathers upon Angels and Dæmons, will be soon unbewitched from that Difficulty. I will therefore lead the way, by desiring them to examine, whether Angels have Bodies, and what those Bodies are. As to the first, we have already shewn the Opinion of the *Greek* Fathers, especially concerning the Bodies of Angels; what the Bodies of those Angels are, we may learn from the *Greek* Fathers, and from the *Latins* in St. *Augustin*, in his Book *de Genesi ad litteram*, in his Epistles *de Civitate Dei*, and scattered in other Places. They all agree, they are subtle and slender, like Air or Æther. The good Angels have more fine Grain, and the Wicked more gross. From this Opinion of the Fathers, and their secondary Authority; (for I give the Scriptures, and Reason the Preheminence) this vulgar Errour will vanish, That *all animated Bodies are of one common Nature*; that is, composed of organized and con-creted Matter, or made with Flesh and Members, as

ours

ours  
Body  
we  
with  
in th  
habl  
of a  
most  
ed  
Min  
subt  
the  
man  
mov  
Fine  
less  
Affe  
with  
is or  
and  
that  
phil  
be n  
and  
spiri  
Boni  
mat  
as h  
tri o  
with  
Wo  
Bod



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 211

ours are at this Day. There is another Kind of Body of an heavenly Nature, as Angels have, and we shall have likewise, when we become equal with them: Our gross, heavy, unactive Bodies are in the lowest Class of Bodies, taken up, and inhabited by mental and rational Beings; but those of a more light, subtle, and active Nature, are the most noble of all animated Bodies, and more adapted to assist all the Functions, both of Body and Mind: For even in our earthly Bodies, the more subtle, fluid, and slender Parts, called Spirits, are the most proper Vehicle of the Soul, that commands them to their Posts, and directs them to move the Members of the Body; and upon their Fineness and Crassitude, their Quantity great or less, or their regular, or irregular Motions, all the Affections and Operations of the Mind depend; with them the Soul takes its Place, and the Body is only an outward Defense and Covering of Skin and Flesh, like a Case or Box. Away therefore with that Vulgar Notion, ἀφιλόσοφον καὶ ἀθεολόγον, Unphilosophical and Untheological, That there can be no animated Body without Belly, Bowels, Flesh and Blood, and without them no Habitable for a spiritual Being. \* *A Spirit hath not Flesh and Bones*, says Christ; he does not say a Spirit is ἀσώματον, *without Body*, if it has not Bones and Flesh, as has been before said of Christ by the Fathers. ἢ ἐν σαρκί, ἢ ἀσώματον δὲ, *Being not Flesh, and yet not without Body*. Surely Christ might have said in fewer Words, and not less to the purpose, a Spirit has not Body, as ye see me have; if a Spirit had been

---

\* Luke xxiv. 39.

without



## 212 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

without any Body at all: But he did not say this, but only that Spirit has not Flesh and Bones; that is, a gross, visible, and palpable Body, as ye see and feel me to have. \*

So we have explained, as far as is in our Power, the most momentous Parts of the Doctrine of the Resurrection: there remain others of not so great weight to be examined; but as the Chapter has swelled already into too great a Bulk, we shall refer them to the next.

Moreover, the Philosophers use the same Epithets, Words, and Terms with the Apostle himself, in describing our future Body, in their Description of the Life the Just are to have in Heaven. St. Paul calls our future Body a Celestial One, an Aethereal One, in the Heavens; they call it *ἀθάνατον* and *ἀσώματον*, in Opposition to the Terrestrial One. He says it is immortal and incorruptible; and they, that it is *ἀθάνατον*, *ἀσώματον*, *ἀσπαστον*: Immortal, Incorruptible, Eternal, and Invulnerable by Death. He compares it to the Stars, with them it is *ἀσπερίαις*, Related, or advanced to Glory equal with the Stars. He says it is bright and glorious with them, *ἀσπερίαις*, splendid; they both use the same Words, *σώμα πνευματικόν*, a spiritual Body. It is therefore no doubt they meant the same Kind of Nature and Species in both; the Philosophers, of a gross sanguinary Body, not only had Organical Machinery; but on the contrary Side, a Vehicle; as they term it, composed of subtle Matter, in some measure adapted to the Nature of the Soul, whose Seat it is.

as has been before said of the Body of the Philosophers, it is not a Body, but a Vehicle, as they term it, composed of subtle Matter, in some measure adapted to the Nature of the Soul, whose Seat it is. *R. E.*



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 1213

### REMARKS.

We are now entered into all the curious Questions that some People affect to enquire into above their Reach: The Doctor has indeed shrouded the Grave to his Fancy, and dressed up the Dead like Fairies; he has given them fantastical Shadows, illuminated by the borrowed Light of his prolifick Fancy, a Fancy adorned with Scenes of Gaiety: though, I must needs say, he has endeavoured to fit the dark Chambers of Death with very splendid Furniture, only he has not taken Care to shade them with the true and genuine Sense of Scripture.

He says, the Apostle asks, *1 Cor. xv. 35.* With what Body shall we rise? Whereas, if he asks that Question, he must call himself Fool. His Words are, *But some Man will say, How are the Dead raised up, and with what Body do they come? Thou Fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die. The Fool hath said in his Heart, there is no God.* *Psal. xiv.* Therefore David asks, *If there is a God.* It is the Question of the Fool, *1 Cor. xv. 35.* as though because it is purrified in the Grave, it cannot rise again in another manner. *Though sown in Corruption, it may rise in Incorruption, ver. 42.* is the Conclusion the Apostle draws.

He states the great Question, Whether our Bodies will be Organical or No, and proceeds to four Marks of an Organical Body.

The first Mark is, the Belly for Food; he has mistaken the true Sense of the Apostle's Words; *Meat for the Belly, and the Belly for Meats, but God shall destroy both it and them.* *Kai taũta taũta agragorhē:* The preceding Text clears up the Sense of this, *All Things are lawful for me, but all Things are not expedient.* God, by putting an End by Death to the Dependence of the Body for Food, will thereby put an End to this Dispute of forbidden Meats. *Taũta* refers to the preceding Verse, and therefore this Text has not the least Hint with what Bodies we shall rise at the Resurrection: But that we shall have no Occasion for Meats, I will readily grant, because they yield a too sensual Enjoyment for Celestial Beings. Moreover, Corruption and Sensuality go together, and the Apostle says, *Our Bodies shall be raised in Incorruption.* The Doctor proceeds with a Flourish: When shall he destroy them? Not in this Life, therefore in a future one. *O answer, he destroys them*



## 214 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

them by Death, and therefore they are not of such Moment as the preserving the Body from Fornication, as the Apostle concludes, *Now the Body is not for Fornication, but for the Lord.*

I come now to my full Answer to this Paragraph: He concludes, as the Body will have no Occasion for Meat, it will have no Belly, and consequently no Bowels; and what the Belly is taken away, I grant the Body will really be like the Figure of no Body. He proceeds next to demolish the Thighs, Legs, and Feet; and at last puts it into the Form of a Posture-Master, or a Scaramouch.

I desire to know if all the internal Parts of the Body are not contrived for Beauty as well as Use; and is not the Soul naturally delighted with Symmetry and Proportion? The Body might have been made as Organical as it is now, yet so deformed, that the Soul would find an Uneasiness at the Sight; and even as we are, the Soul delights to pick out the most beautiful and regular of even humane Forms, to please itself through the Eye. If therefore we once grant the Pleasure of the Eye after the Resurrection, the humane Form will or may remain, to please that Eye; though the organical Parts may not be in every Respect so useful as in this World.

I can never persuade my self God gives us material Forms, let them be never so near the Description of the Doctor's lucid Rayments, unless the Eye is pleased with those Forms; for all material Light is Darkness in it self, without Eyes to take in the Rays, and to convey them to the Perception. This is making God indeed perform a very useless Resurrection, to give us material Forms, and not to be seen, that is equivalent to the giving us no Forms at all.

I lay it down therefore as an unalterable Hypothesis, that Seeing is one Branch of Celestial Enjoyment, otherwise the Resurrection would be vain; and if so, the humane Body, as to its exterior Form, may remain, without any Contradiction; for if the Body will be in a globular Form, with Eyes therein, the Appearance would not be so agreeable as an humane Shape and Form. This, I hope, cannot be denied.

I have made Way now for the Case of the Body, and that is more than the Doctor has done in all this Chapter; for by the Argument it appears no more than a liquid Lump, or Congeries of Light and Flame.

If any learned Man will be pleased to enter the Lists with me against my Hypothesis, I shall be very willing and pleased to have it fully discussed. I am never angry with candid, rational, and learned Opposition.

We

We certainly N  
State inc  
we have  
ed in help  
gar, and

But it  
be taken  
into the  
tation of  
One, it i  
trails: Su  
vided the  
This is g  
him.

Howev  
that State  
Diminutio  
down for  
of those g  
on of the

2dly. W  
the Veins,  
and the B  
of the Bo  
the Veins,  
now, but  
ly with t  
fan and pl  
dy is alw  
filled with

3dly. A  
linked to  
take it en  
the glorifi  
and the A

I conclu  
trails, wic  
and Spirits  
that may

As for t  
not inheri  
taken, or a  
thing that



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 215

We come now to his next Argument of Nutrition: Certainly Nutrition supposes a Decay of Parts to be supplied, a State inconsistent with the Resurrection promised to us; and we have several Organs that administer to the Senses, employed in helping us to eat with Pleasure, common with the Beggar, and the dignified Prelate.

But still if we suppose the unnecessary Inside of a Man to be taken away at the Resurrection, this is a too nice Enquiry into the Divine Secrets; if God has promised us a Transmutation of our Body from a corruptible into an incorruptible One, it is very absurd to ask what will become of our Entrails: Suppose they will be consolidated, or annihilated, provided the Promise of God holds, what will that be to us? This is giving him Directions, it is prescribing too freely to him.

However, I shall explain in what manner a Body may be in that State of Life organical, without Nutriture, or a supposed Diminution of Parts. As Matter possesses Space, I shall lay it down for granted, Motion is very necessary for the Happiness of those glorified Beings; and therefore an organical Disposition of the Muscles is not inconsistent with that State.

2<sup>dly</sup>, Without Diminution of Parts, the Blood may flow in the Veins, and the nervous Juices circulate through their Tubes, and the Brain may receive Impressions from the Constitution of the Body; yet the Blood may never move heavily through the Veins, nor press too much upon the Brain, as it often does now, but flow always in a due Temperature, impregnated only with the finest animal Spirits, so that the Passions rather fan and play, than rise into Storms and Tempests, and the Body is always in the same light Disposition we are in, when filled with solid Joy and Tranquillity of Mind in this World.

3<sup>dly</sup>, As to Gravity, the great Impediment of the Soul when linked to the Body, I say, this may be diminished; though to take it entirely away, would destroy the Operations of even the glorified Body. From hence the Vivacity thereof arises, and the Agility, as we see Birds fly in the Air.

I conclude there may be an organized Body without Entrails, without Hunger, and without Thirst; that the Blood and Spirits may afford a light, pleasing, corporeal Sensation, that may give us an exquisite Taste of the Joys of Heaven.

As for the Text in the *Corinthians*, that *Flesh and Blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of Heaven*, 1 Cor. xv. 50. This must be taken, *σὰρκα καὶ αἷμα*, the Passions of Flesh and Blood, or something that attends the corruptible Part thereof, as the succeed-

ing



## 218 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

ing Words declare, *neither doth Corruption inherit Incorruption*; though the Doctor makes even them an Argument on his Side of the Question, that Flesh and Blood is there taken in an absolute physical Sense, because *φθόρος*, follows; whereas, *φθόρος*, Corruption, is often in the Scriptures used in a moral and figurative Sense, as by St. Paul, Rom. viii. 21. *Because the Creature it self also shall be delivered from the Bondage of Corruption, into the glorious Liberty of the Children of God.* Here the Corruption of human Frailty is stiled *φθόρος*. Again, Gal. vi. 8. *For he that soweth to the Flesh, shall of the Flesh reap Corruption,* *φθόρος*. Again, 1 Pet. i. 4. *Having escaped the Corruption that is in the World through Lust.* So that indeed this Greek *φθόρος* has left the Doctor in the Lurch; and *φθαρτός* and *ἀφθαρτός*, will do the same: For St. Peter applies it to Regeneration, 1 Pet. i. 23. *Being born again, not of *φθαρτός*, corruptible Seed, but of Incorruptible, by the Word of God, *ἀφθάρτου*.* In all these Places, the Words are taken in a moral and figurative Sense. However, to fix the Apostle's Sense concerning Flesh and Blood, let us consult the 48th Verse of this celebrated Chapter of the 18th of the Corinthians, *As is the earthy, *χοϊνός*, such are they also that are earthy.* No Commentator will deny this to be spoken allegorically of the Corruption of our Nature, and therefore by as certain a Rule of all Commentators, the succeeding Verse, and the next to that, may be taken allegorically likewise.

Thus I have dispatched two of the Doctor's Marks, I shall come now to his third, *ἀχαρακτήριον*, made without Hands: I must confess it must be a very odd figured Body without Hands; though in this the Apostle is very ill used. However, I shall examine his first Text, 2 Cor. v. 1. *For this we know, that if our earthly House of this Tabernacle were dissolved, we have a Building of God, an House not made with Hands, eternal in the Heavens.* The Doctor wants to know how we shall preserve the Antithesis here, because both our earthly and our heavenly Tabernacles are made by the Eternal Being. I answer, What shall we think of the Antithesis in the Doctor's Sense, an House made with Hands to it, in Opposition to a House not made with Hands thereto? I defy any such Precedent in Rhetorick to be shewn: An Allegory of a Horse with As's Ears clapped on. What has a House to do with Hands? Building and Hands have some Relation; Buildings are generally raised by Hands. This therefore is the more easy, natural, and consistent Sense; and if the Antithesis is not so exactly preserved, the Sense is more; and the

the w  
that it  
in the  
Mon  
made v  
use of  
his Tex  
taken  
made  
build an  
know  
made w  
Text of  
to find  
been in  
High-P  
Taberna  
Building  
made w  
nal in sh  
an heart  
immort  
have it  
subservi  
on, as v  
Waco  
rection  
and ino  
Secret  
on new  
serve, he  
not only  
Heaven  
puts m  
The  
corrupti  
pleat B  
in grant  
an organ  
sequence  
from th  
Fancy h



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 217

the worst you can make of *χειροποιητος*, in this Sense, is that it is an Expletive; a no uncommon manner of Expression in the Holy Scriptures.

Moreover, *χειροποιητος* never signified something not made with Hands thereto: and if our Translators had made use of the Word *by*, instead of *with*, they had translated *χειροποιητος* more justly, and intirely cast the Doctor from his Text: For *χειροποιητος* signifies made by Hands; therefore *χειροποιητος* is not made by Hands. In this Sense it is taken by St. Mark xiv. 58. *I will destroy this Temple that is made with (or by) χειροποιητος Hands, and in three Days I will build another, χειροποιητος made without Hands.* I desire to know if the Meaning of the Text was, the Temple was made with Hands to it. I am surprized the Doctor put this Text of St. Mark in the Margin, and I was more surprized to find him add Heb. ix. 11. which explains fully all we have been in Contention for. The Text is, *For Christ being become a High-Priest of good Things to come, by a greater and more perfect Tabernacle, not made with Hands; that is to say, not of this Building, χειροποιητος.* This explains a *House not made with Hands*; that is to say, not of this Building, but eternal in the Heavens. This, I think, bids the Doctor's Antithesis an hearty Farewel; so that a new Antithesis arises, mortal and immortal, and not organical and inorganical, as he is pleased to have it. Though, indeed, why the Hands, the meanest and subservient Parts of the Body, should usurp so large a Dominion, as to give Denomination to the Whole, I cannot tell.

We come next to his last Mark; that the Sons of the Resurrection shall be *body* *such* equal unto Angels. From these plain and inoffensive Words of our Saviour, he is drawing us into a Secret to make away our Bodies like old Clothes; and to put on new ones exactly such as Angels have. Yet we may observe, he grants Angels to have material and visible Beings; visible not only to us if they appear in this World, but to the Saints in Heaven: therefore the Saints in Heaven must have Eyes. This puts me upon asking the Doctor a few Questions in his way.

The Eye is an organical Part of the Body, it has flowing corruptible Parts, Humours, Muscles; and is indeed a complete Body of itself. Why then is the Doctor so scrupulous in granting an organical Body, when he must necessarily grant an organical Eye? And if an organical Eye, another Consequence follows, an organical Brain to receive the Impressions from the optick Nerves; so that he has helped the Painter's Fancy here, in making angelick Heads to fill up the heavenly Chorus;



## 218 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Chorus, and has brought Organism into his Construction before he was aware thereof.

We come next to examine his Enquiry into the Matter of this new created Being after the Resurrection. Whether he suspects the Power of God, or for what Reason, I cannot tell; he is a great Enemy to God's raising the same Body; and he thinks his own Hypothesis answers better the Condition of a future State.

His Marks are, that it is *heavenly, spiritual, powerful, glorious, and conformable to the glorious Body of Christ.*

He pretends to define this heavenly Matter, not to be like Crystal, hard and solid; but that it is perfectly liquid, as Air and Ether; and what he gets by this arbitrary Assumption, we shall presently see.

1<sup>stly</sup> Spiritual; that it is a Sort of slender Matter, not unlike our animal Spirits, though more vivacious, and has a Power in itself to live without Victuals, Drink, or Sleep; it would be a very odd Sort of Integument, made only with animal Spirits, or something like them.

3<sup>dly</sup>. It is powerful and active; this may be true in some measure, yet it will not come up to the Doctor's Hypothesis; the Notion of animal Spirits is common and allowed, though not by the most ingenious Philosophers and Physicians; and I shall give three or four Reasons against them.

All the Motion and Agility of a humane Body depends upon the quick Circulation of Fluids through the Nerves. If the Blood was Brandy itself, without that Circulation, the Body would be a torpid, useless, dead Trunk; and when there is any Pressure upon the Nerves, all the Spirits in the Blood are ineffectual; so that it is a vulgar Notion to give into the sanguinary System so much. Whereas the spiritual Motion in the Body, as it is called, is only an harmonious Disposition of the Nerves; they inform the Blood, the Muscles, and the whole Body.

If the Mind sends the Spirits in the Blood to any determinate Place, Anatomists know in these days, no muscular or nervous Motion will proceed therefrom; and therefore all that *Dr Cartes* applies to the Blood in forming the Passions, is not true Philosophy. The Blood supplies and keeps up the Materials to fill the Nerves, but the Motions and Irregularities, and Marches in the humane Body, are the Matches or Retreats of the nervous Juices. Their Ob-

sequiousness

sequious  
their  
us, tha  
in the  
Spirits  
to say,  
ward Sy  
What  
fine act  
rying t  
yet the  
a Deter  
nized or  
and Mus  
must ha  
cannot r  
mechanic  
way; an  
Direction  
will carr  
same Di  
an intel  
Will wit  
those Li  
by the v  
they all  
An un  
standing,  
out a Mi  
It is i  
for all  
same La  
reason w  
nuteness  
Laws and  
duced to  
what ma  
and those  
We co  
his Notio  
Scripture  
Objects  
upon thin  
eng was c



sequiousness to the Mind, in some measure, depends upon their Tenuity, and, to a particular Quality unknown to us, that stirs the Nerves, and creates mechanical Motion in the Body: But to say, the loose, wandering, animal Spirits can create that mechanical Motion, is the same as to say, the Spirits in the Wind abroad can move the inward System of an humane Body.

What then shall we say to his Scheme of a Congeries of fine active Spirits being directed by the Mind, and carrying the whole Vehicle to some determinate Place, and yet the Vehicle shall not be organical? How can there be a Determination of Motion in any Body, not either organized or mechanized? *i. e.* without Nerves, Veins, Arteries, and Muscles, or Wheels, Ropes, and Pullies. The Body it self must have Ligaments, and Cohesion; for animal Spirits cannot make the Parts cohere; therefore these must have a mechanical Direction of Motion in themselves to move one way; and this must be external Impulse, or by an inward Direction; and the greater Quantity of inward Forces, will carry the lesser Quantity of unactive Matter in the same Direction: But this inward Direction cannot be in an intelligent System, without a Communication of the Will with some Lines of Direction; and in a humane Body those Lines are the whole Compages of Nerves, directed by the will in the Soul, whose Seat is the Brain, where they all unite.

An unorganized Body, endued with Motion and Understanding, is unphilosophical, unnatural, and impossible, without a Miracle.

It is in vain to recur to the Tenuity of these Beings; for all Matter, whether more or less, is subject to the same Laws; and whenever we get hold of Matter, we reason within our reach: Nor can the Fineness and Minuteness of the Parts, escape the Fetters of mathematical Laws and Certainty; therefore this Dispute is to be reduced to this Question, *If the Will commands the Spirit, in what manner is the Communication carried on between the Will and those fine Spirits?*

We come now to his fourth Character, *Glorious*. I think his Notion of Celestial Glory is too narrow; for, as the Scripture lends us Similitudes from natural and common Objects about us, the Doctor, whose Idea's run very much upon shining, invests a Soul with so much Light, that if one was over-against my Window, I would order my Shut-



## 210 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

ter to be closed: But what is Light? Or how worthy to be compared with celestial Glory? It is only a Congeries of globular Particles, endued with a swift Motion, and striking upon an organized Body called an Eye, and communicating from thence a lively Sensation to an organized Congeries of Strings, called Nerves, in the Brain, the Seat of Perception, and of the Soul. It is in itself as dark as the grossest Matter. Is not a Ball at Billiards blind? or will a Congeries of ten thousand such Balls struck against the Sides of a Table produce Light? Diminish those Balls to the size of a globular Particle of Light, and then let them strike upon the Eye, and there will be Light. This Light therefore proceeds from the Soul, an Action of that intelligent Being; but still here is Organization, and without Organization, the Doctor, if alive, would find it hard to make visible Light.

We next proceed to his last Mark or Character, *Being fashioned like unto the glorious Body of Christ.*

The Doctor seems inclined to fall into a most wicked Heresy, though he dare not speak it plain; That the Body of Christ upon Earth was a fantastical one, as the Gnosticks held. With a little Patience we shall get his Meaning out.

Flesh and Blood, he says, cannot inherit the Kingdom of God, and cannot be rendered incorruptible; for then it would be no longer Flesh and Blood: for take away the essential Properties, and it ceases to be.

If the Particles remain, and the external Form, that Body may very properly be said to remain. If a River is frozen up, though it is the Property of the River to be in a continual Flux of Particles, it is called a River still. I shall therefore shew in what manner Flesh and Blood does inherit the Kingdom of God, though Corruption is put off, and Incorruption takes its Place.

The Power of God that made all Things, surely can stop the Motion and Flying of the Particles of Matter. Corruptibility, is no more than a Succession of Parts, and when the Continuity is dissolved, the Body is dispersed and carried away upon the Wings of the Air. This Air, by reason of the Minuteness of its Parts, and its continual Fluidity, insinuates by degrees into all gross material Bodies, and makes either the Impression of Putrefaction, Rust, or Mouldering; and indeed where there is any Motion of Matter, it carries something away with it; there-

fore,  
Parts  
But  
not  
and  
dies  
and  
Flesh  
Nice,  
proper  
To  
mina  
predat  
Sulph  
God  
more  
not  
He  
Resur  
that  
of a  
An  
wond  
Earth  
Days  
partic  
the P  
obseq  
woul  
says,  
way  
Bu  
war  
the  
sure  
there  
perfo  
perfo  
appli  
Earl  
Ale  
made  
verti  
ed T



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 221

fore, when the human Body bends to Age, the Organical Parts decay, and lose more than they take in by recruiting.

But if God is pleased to stop this Depredation, if he will not suffer the Particles to fly, nor to pervade the Pores, and perspire away: this Consolidation will make our Bodies Incorruptible, they will be always then in one State, and so may continue for Eternity: and why is not this Flesh and Blood still? Surely the Doctor would be too Nice, in denying this: and therefore St. Paul does not improperly stile it the putting on Incorruption.

To what purpose then is it to tell us what are the Stamina of the Blood? For God can stop the Motion and Depredations of any Sort of Matter. Surely neither Salt, Sulphur, Spirit, nor Earth can stand against the Power of God; and if the Doctor brings ten thousand Principles more into the Blood, it will be all the same, if they do not fret and corrode the Banks as they flow.

He concludes, after he has endeavoured to set aside the Resurrection of Flesh and Blood, to assert in plain Terms, that our Blessed Saviour's Body is of another Matter, and of a Coelestial Nature, which he calls Luminous.

And to carry the Dispute further, he ascribes all the wonderful Transfigurations of the Body of Christ upon Earth; as his walking upon the Water, his fasting forty Days, and his conveying himself from the Crowd, to the particular Disposition of his convertible Body, and not to the Power of a Miracle: He calls it the *Materia Sequax*, the obsequious Matter; from whence I conclude, the Doctor would not have it to be of the same Nature with ours. He says, *Unda non cessare Corpori levi*. The Waves did not give way to his light Body.

But, after all, if the Scriptures have any Truth, Christ was made of the same Flesh and Blood with Abraham, as the Apostle says, *Heb. ii. 16. Verily he took not on him the Nature of Angels, but he took on him the Seed of Abraham.* And therefore all the Miracles performed by his Body, were performed in the same Manner as they would have been performed by ours, if the Divine Power of God had been applied to us: He had not an angelical Nature upon Earth, instead of an human one; and therefore the Apostle concludes, *For. 19. In all things is beloved him to be made like unto his Brethren*; and there was no more Convertibility in his carnal Nature than in ours.

These Heresies border very near Marcion, against whom



## 222 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

*Tertullian* took so much Pains to write; he believed that Christ received from the Virgin *Mary*, only the Form and Shews of Christ's Body, and that the Souls were raised at the Resurrection only in the Forms of Flesh. See *Tertullian de Resur. Car.* p. 48. Edit. *De Le Bay.* And at the End of this Chapter, he closes in with *Appelles*, that Christ was made from the Substance of the Stars. See *Tertul. de Resur. Car.*

He is in this Point very silent as to the Fathers, for he well knew it was the *Gnostick* Heresy, and the full Cry of those venerable Writers was against him; and because I would not Wrong so great a Man, nor injure the Dead, I shall give my Reasons, why I charge him with denying our Saviour took our Flesh upon him from the Virgin *Mary*.

He lays down in a very Poetical Manner, the Description of Christ's Glory and Nature: Fire, and Clouds, and Lights, are the Paintings proper for the Doctor's Fancy, who seems very much inclined to the *Persian* Idolatry, of Worshipping the Sun; he is so great an Admirer of Light, that he really cloaths even the Great God of Heaven with it; not in a Figurative Manner, as the *Psalmist* does, *Psal. civ. 2. Who coverest thy self with Light, as with a Garment:* But he invests that Eternal Being, whom no Eye can see, nor no Fancy Paint, with a material Garment of Light, and calls it *Schechinah*; and from this *Schechinah*, he would insinuate Christ borrowed his Substance.

The Light with which God revealed himself, was so called; but that it was Part of his Divine Nature, or of his Clothing, I can never believe.

However, the Doctor seemed inclined to believe it was, and that Christ is Part of the Substance of that *Schechinah*, now in Heaven; and that he was so likewise before his Crucifixion: For he says, That the Transfiguration of Christ upon the Mount, was shining from his own native Fountain of Light; so that Flesh and Blood was only a Disguize put on, and taken off at his Pleasure, even when he was upon the Earth. If this be true, how much are we deceived in our Scripture Revelations concerning him? But this the Doctor was obliged to recur to; because otherwise he must destroy the Body of Jesus at his Death, or come into a great Argument against his own Hypothesis, concerning the Resurrection, and our Rising with different Bodies; for then



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 223

he must confess, Corruption or Passibility could put on Incorruption and Impassibility.

But as he cannot remove this Objection without removing the Force of the Scriptures, the Rising of the same Body holds good, because the Parallel of Christ's Resurrection and ours, is established upon the same Footing; and his Resurrection is always appealed to by the Apostles, and the Fathers, to prove ours.

To what purpose the Doctor comes so low as to quote the second Council of *Nice*, is beyond my Power to tell, it being a bigotted, Popish Council; and to cover the Matter, in the next Paragraph he rails at the Papists, and flourishes against them; this was ungrateful, however. What they meant by *ex vii ouis*, *ex armaris*, is very little to the Argument, or to any of our Purposes in this Dispute; and so I leave it.

---

### C H A P. VIII.

*What Bodies we are to have at the Resurrection; whether the same with our present, or different ones therefrom.*

HAVING thus finished the first Part of our Argument concerning the Resurrection, including the Certainty and Motives thereof; and the Matter and Form of the Body that is to rise: We come now to the second Part, containing other Questions of that Nature, though of an inferior Rank.

The first is, *Whether we are to Rise with the same Bodies we lie down with in the Grave.* Thereby we mean the numerical Body, with the same Matter, and



## 224 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

and the same Particles. This is a most celebrated Question, though in my Opinion more curious than necessary; it is not of any great Consequence to any of us, whether we shall have the same Particles, or others of equal Dignity and Value, or what shall become of our CAST-OFF \* Carcasses, when we shall live in Light with Angels. But as great Disputes have been raised concerning this Affair, we shall examine into the State of the Question, and to which Side Reason and Scripture incline.

It is agreed on both Sides, that the Bodies of those found Alive at the Coming of the Lord shall be changed; the same Particles remaining, or at least the greatest Part of them: For the Structure of the humane Body being dissolved, the same Matter (excepting the sordid Parts) will be changed into another Form, and other Qualities, viz. the very same in common with immortal and incorruptible Bodies; as the Apostle says, *2 Cor. v. 4. Not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that Mortality might be swallowed up in Life. And 1 Cor. XV. 53. For this Corruptible must put on Incorruption.* This Change cannot be without a Dissolution of Parts, that the Terrestrial Bodies may be converted into Flames.

Moreover, it is on both Sides agreed, that Christ rose from the Dead with the same Particles he had before, and carried them with him into Heaven, and exalted the Celestial Purity by the Power of

*But as we neglect the Hairs cut off from our Beards, so when the Divine Spirit goes out from a Man, what will become of the Receptacle? Whether Fire shall burn it, or Beasts tear it in Pieces, or the Earth cover it, no more belongs to him, than what happens to a New-born Child. Sen. Epist.*

92. *But as we neglect the Hairs cut off from our Beards, so when the Divine Spirit goes out from a Man, what will become of the Receptacle? Whether Fire shall burn it, or Beasts tear it in Pieces, or the Earth cover it, no more belongs to him, than what happens to a New-born Child. Sen. Epist.*

his



his vivifying Spirit: These Things being granted on both Sides, our Dispute remains concerning the other Bodies of the Dead, dissipated by Putrefaction, and dispersed in a thousand Places, whether these Particles are collected again, numerically, into distinct Quantities of Matter, according to the Number of the Bodies departed, from the Beginning, to the End of the World; † and then these little Quantities are moulded into the antient Form; Lincaments and Members of the Body.

There are several Places in the Scripture that very much favour the Identical Resurrection. Christ speaking concerning the Resurrection, says, || *For the Hour is coming, in which all that are in the Graves shall hear his Voice, (i. e. of the Son of God) and shall come forth, &c.* Christ seems to assert here, that the Carcases in their Graves shall come forth at the hearing his Voice; as *Lazarus* was called from the Grave to Life. Agreeable to this, is what *John* says in the Revelations, \* *And the Sea shall give up her Dead.* Both the Elements of Air and Water that swallowed up the dead Carcases shall restore them again, and they shall appear alive at the Judgement. His Vision or Representation of the Resurrection is to the same effect: †† *And I saw the Dead, small and great, stand before God.* If the Prophets saw Crouds of Children, as well as adult Persons, stand before the Throne after the Resurrection, this is a strong Presumption, every one will have the Body with which he dies, either small or great, in that Place.

† The Doctor is a little too exact here.

|| John v. 28, 29. \* Rev. xv. 13. †† Rev. xx. 12.



## 226 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

I omit *Job*, because the best of the *Hebraans*, and other Interpreters, understand him only concerning a Temporal Resurrection; nor is it probable an *Arabian*, a Foreigner, and one who was before *Moses* and the written Law, should know more of the || Resurrection than all the *Hebrews*, even the Prophets for many Ages. I omit several figurative Expressions in the Prophets of the old Canon brought to this purpose. \* *St. Paul* comes very close, that our mortal Bodies shall be quickened and changed into glorious Ones. And in the 15th to the † *Corinthians*, though at first he seems to hint, that another Body shall arise, different from that in the Grave; yet in the following Verses, he, according to the rigid literal Sense, seems only to invest the former Body with new Qualities. Over and above these Places in the Scripture, some Arguments and Reasons are brought from Equity, that the numerical Body shall arise and be lifted up to Heaven, as it had its share in the Goods and Evils of this Life, to be partaker of Reward and Glory in the next; nor do they think it just, to have one Body suffer, and another crowned, or to transfer the Rewards and Punishments to another Being. Upon this Stone most of the Fathers struck.

This Method of Arguing, as we have before observed, is Unphilosophical, and without Foundation; for insensible Matter is neither capable of Pleasure nor Pain, either in this Life, or in a future One. The Soul only wills and understands, feels the Emotions of Grief and Joy, and has in itself the Affections of Good and Bad; therefore to enjoy,

---

|| *Job* xix. 25, 26. \* *Phil.* iii. 20. *Rom.* viii. 11. † 1 *Cor.* xv. 37, 38.



*Of the STATE of the DEAD.* 227

or to suffer, are peculiar to that alone: The Soul only Sins, and offends God, or pleases him; that only is punished or rewarded, is happy or miserable. Moreover our Body is a frail and inconstant Substance, in a perpetual slow Motion, and Change of Parts: We have many Sorts of Bodies in this Life, some Coverings for our Faults, and others for our Virtues; how then shall they come at just and congruous Punishments? We have touched upon this Argument before, and it answers no End to insist upon it here.

In the mean time, if the above-mentioned Texts of Scripture are to be taken in the obvious Sense, and our mortal and immortal Bodies are the same Substance, what are the Consequences? We must certainly adhere to the Letter, when the Nature of the Thing will bear it. Therefore let us see what Repugnancies, Conveniencies, and Inconveniencies, this Opinion of the Identity of the Terrestrial and Cœlestial Body carries with it. We have before observed, that our Body in this Life is various, under a continual State of Renovation and Decay, and after some Years passes through an entire Change. Therefore in the Course of humane Life, we may have six or seven different Bodies, or more, if Longevity permits.

This brings into my Mind the Question, impertinently enough urged by the † Sadducees: concerning the Woman who had seven Husbands, Whom she should have at the Resurrection? Let us put the Soul for the Woman; to have seven Bodies, Wives in a manner to that Soul, Which shall it have at the Resurrection? for it had all. Perhaps you

---

\* *Matth.* xxii. 23.



228 *Of the STATE of the DEAD.*

will say the last: But it is possible the Soul was more Wicked or Good in the first Body, than in the last; and therefore the first ought to be taken in as a Partner in the Glory or Misery. Moreover, an old and battered Body, or a young and infantile one, are no Ornaments to an heavenly Court: Of these the greatest Part of departed human Nature consists; but if you would raise Infants to an adult Age, and bring back the Body, worn out by Age to Juvenility, here are so many Additions and Interpolations, that like the Ship *Argus*, an hundred times repaired, it has only the Name, and none of the first Particles therein: I had rather have a new Habitation from Heaven, than this old patched up one, mended, and botched in this manner.

*Secondly*, A numerical Resurrection requires the same Parts, Bowels, Humours and Members, as before; but this cannot be, because I have \* proved from the Scriptures, that some Parts will be abolished: The Belly, and the Appurtenances thereof, and all the inferiour Parts. Moreover, we have plainly proved the Celestial Body not capable of Flesh and Blood, nor of Organical Construction, and therefore the Form will not remain, if the Matter does.

Nay, some have arrived to that Degree of Boldness and Temerity, to give that Body, Throat, Bowels, and all the culinary Tackle, with all the Instruments of † Generation. Lastly, they will have the excrementitious Parts; Teeth, Nails, Hair,

\* How proved, see in the Remarks to the last Chapter.

† *Athanasius* determines, there will be no Distinction of Sexes. See *Serm.* 3. *contra Arian.* *Hilar. Cas.* 23. in *Matth. Basil.* in *Psalm.* cxiv. *Theodor. Quæst.* 37. in *Gen. adact.* *Rom.* 34.

Beard,



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 229

Beard, to make up this Cœlestial Body. This gave occasion to some Sarcasms, mentioned by St. *Hierome*: If there are, *say they*, Hair and Beard, there must be Barbers; and if Children, Nurses; and if Blood, as || Saint *Augustin* says, why not Phlegm, and yellow and black Choler; let them look to this, whose Boldness carries them thus far. In my Opinion, these Appendages are rather adapted to an Animal, than an Angelical Life such as the Saints live in Heaven, who are the Sons of God, \* and Children of the Resurrection.

I am not moved with this common Answer, that these Bowels and Parts may remain, though without any Use, or Functions, as they have at this day. To what purpose then are they there? why are the unnecessary Parts given back? God never deals in Superfluities, and as in this mortal Life we have none even the most minute, without some Use, would you have in a more perfect and excellent Body, most of the Structure thereof useless, and vain? You'll say, perhaps, all these make up the Integrality of the human Nature in Heaven: Can useless and unnecessary Parts make up Integrality? Integrality it may be, perhaps, of an earthly Body, but not of an Immortal and Cœlestial one; for human Nature is capable of two Sorts of Integrality: Neither are they for Ornament; for what Gracefulness can there be in our uncomely Parts; as the † Apostle calls them, or in those serving for Exoneration. ||

Thus

|| St. *Augustin* does not say so, the Doctor is turning the Question upon the Father, as he did before upon the Apostle, when he made him call himself Fool.

\* Gen. vi. Job i. 6. xxxviii. 7. † 1 Cor. xii. 23.

|| The Antients indeed gave their Gods an humane Figure; particularly the *Epicureans*, whom *Cicero* confutes; there is nei-  
they



## 236 *Of the STATE of the DEAD*

Thus far we have enquired what Body of the many we carry about with us in this Life, and what Parts of that Body must rise to support their Notion of Identity: We shall consider next in what manner they bring the scattered Parts of Dust together again: The Ashes are carried into distant Parts over the Earth and Seas, all the Parts of the terraqueous Globe, and from thence into the Region of the \* Air, raised by the solar Heat, and scattered into a thousand Places of the Heavens. Moreover, they are not only sowed and dispersed through all the Elements, but they are inserted in the Bodies of Animals, Trees, Fossils, and other Things; from whence it is very hard to take them away; and by their Transmigrations through different Bodies, they assume new Natures and Qualities, new Shapes and Figures.

These Things being granted, we may ask in what manner this Recollection of Parts and Particles latent, from infinite Distances is made. Nature is too weak to perform all this, and the divine Power must never be called forth except in a just and necessary Cause. But as it is perfectly useless to have the numerical Parts in the immortal Body, we had in the mortal one; for this unnecessary Performance, we must not call in the divine Power. With Man it would be a foolish Work to bring Trifles to bear, and with God it is not to be men-

---

ther Use for the external Parts, nor Beauty in the inward: There is nothing supervacaneous in Nature; see, *Cicero de Nat. Deor. Lib. 39. p. 134.* for the external Ones are no more proper than the Internal. The Heart, the Liver, the Lights, and the rest, when their Usefulness is taken away, have no Beauty; as though nothing could be Blessed or Immortal that had not two Feet.

\* What Impossibilities is he raising against God?

tioned

tion  
reco  
Caro  
End  
out  
them  
rious  
ple.  
rity  
conce  
Marr  
They  
of on  
indiv  
to wh  
We a  
not in  
Ance  
mals,  
minut  
preser  
Urns,  
balme  
being  
the B  
cases  
their  
Air, a  
in the  
Grass,  
culate

† An  
an Expre  
hith out



Of the STATE of the DEAD. 231

tioned. It would be a very † operose Miracle to recollect the Particles of all the deceased humane Carcases from the Beginning of the World to the End thereof, to separate the Mass, and parcel it out into little Heaps, and to reform and reduce them to their ancient Figures. I say, this multifarious Miracle is unnecessary, and without Example. So far of the Inutility, and winding Dexterity of this Affair. We have another Question concerning its Impossibility, for the same Part of Matter cannot be in two Places at the same time. They say some Nations are *Anthrophagi*, Eaters of one another. There is no Possibility of the same individual Flesh's belonging to different Bodies. But to what purpose do we insist upon a few People? We are all *αλλανθοφάγοι*, Eaters of Each other; if not immediately, in length of time we devour our Ancestors; by Transmutations into Herbs and Animals, we come at their Flesh, or at least to some minute Parts thereof. If indeed the Ashes were preserved from the Beginning of the World in their Urns, or Coffins; or rather, if they had been embalmed like Mummies; the Integrality of the Parts being thus preserved, we might hope to preserve the Bodies from this Confusion: But as most Carcases are dissolved and dissipated, some return to their Mother Earth, the rest are exhaled into the Air, and fall down in Dews and Rain, are imbibed in the Roots of Plants, and are the Nutriture of Grass, Corn, and Fruits; from whence they circulate back to our humane Bodies. In this Circuit

---

† An *operose* Miracle is new Philosophy, new Divinity, and an Expression peculiar to the Doctor; he wants Aid to help him out.



## 232 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

the same Particle of Matter may have undergone several *μετεμορφώσεις*, and have gone through more Bodies than the Soul of *Pythagoras*. In this Case, every Body cannot have their own at the Resurrection; if the first Possessor has his Claim, the rest will want theirs; and if the last keeps his Right, what will become of the Pretensions of the first? For instance, of the early Posterity of *Adam*, or the Claimants of the first Ages, shall demand their Bodies, and the rest in succeeding Ages take their own, the last will have very imperfect \*Bodies, when their Fathers have got theirs. Another inexplicable Difficulty remains: For whereas the Parts of Matter pass every day from one Kind to another, by changing their Figure, Magnitude, and other Qualities; Flesh is no more Flesh, nor Blood Blood, from Death to the Resurrection. To explain this farther, every distinct Species of Bodies consists in Particles of a particular Figure, Quantity, and Degree of Motion or Quiet; and those Particles, by their different Situation, Mixture, or Texture, give a Definition to that Species of a Body. Let us therefore suppose, for Example, that Flesh and Blood have their proper Particles, as

\* In Places where Cities have been plowed up, and turned into Fields, and upon the Borders of contending Kingdoms, where many Battles have been, such Transmutations have been very common. Of the Fields of *Marseilles*, after the Defeat of the *Cimbrians*, see, *Plutarch* in the Life of *Marinus*: And these Verses of the Poet are well known.

*Fam seges est ubi Troja fuit ressecundaque falce  
Luxurians Phrygio sanguine pinguis humus.*

The fatten'd Glebe, plow'd up where *Troy* once stood,  
Luxuriant rises with the *Phrygian* Blood.

they

they  
the  
mould  
gures,  
Natur  
Retur  
but m  
Fro  
unnec  
to hav  
ture S  
quence  
the In  
and F  
they c  
have a  
conspi  
our m  
Nume  
But  
any on  
ing th

\* Pe  
not in  
not the  
St. Paul  
ther in  
yet was  
the Thi  
dy of th  
dise: W  
son, or  
during  
Saints,  
departed  
their Bo  
allotted



*Of the STATE of the DEAD.* 233

they are not immutable; after the Putrefaction of the Body, they pass into other Bodies, and are moulded into different Shapes, Forms, and Figures, by the Pores they pass through, and lose their Natures in the Passage; and therefore upon their Return, they can be no longer Flesh and Blood, but make another Substance, as Sap, or the like.

From what has been said, it appears, that it is unnecessary, troublesome, if not impossible, for us to have the same Bodies in this Life, and in a future State, after we have weighed all the Consequences of this Identity. We may moreover add, the Inconsistency of this Notion with the Matter and Form of our celestial Bodies; for this proves they cannot be the same. These two last Chapters have a mutual Dependence upon each other, and conspire in the same Opinion of the \* Diversity of our mortal and immortal Bodies, as to Species and Numericalness, as to Substance and Accidents.

But if the Love of a terrestrial Body prevails with any one, that he cannot bear the thoughts of parting therewith, let it rise, and let him have it in the

---

\* Perhaps you will say, it is not the same Person, if it is not in a great measure the same Body; I say, if the Soul had not the least of the dead Body, it would be the same Person. St. Paul said he was *rapt into the third Heaven*, and yet whether in the Body, or out of the Body, he could not tell; and yet was he not the very Person of Paul still? Christ says to the Thief, *This Day shalt thou be with me in Paradise*: The Body of the Thief was upon the Cross, it did not go into Paradise: Whom therefore did Christ take into Paradise, another Person, or the same? Or was Christ another Person, or the same, during the three Days his Body was in the Grave? All the Saints, Martyrs, Prophets, and Patriarchs, and all that have departed, whether Good or Bad, before the Resumption of their Bodies are the same Persons; and have their distinct Fates allotted them.



## 234 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

same Form, and with the same Particles, provided he will allow the Change of the terrestrial Body into one of a celestial Form and Quality.

Thus far we have examined what the Scriptures, and on the other Side, what Reason and the Nature of the Thing defines. Concerning the Identity and Diversity of the Body in this Life, and in a future State, in Heaven, and upon Earth; and upon summing up the Testimonies, we conclude, according to the literal Hypothesis of the Scripture, the same Body that falls will rise, the Body in the Grave is to come forth into Light; at the Voice of Christ, at the Sound of the Trumpet, the Sea will spue out her Dead, and the Earth hers, and every Region and Element of this inferiour World, will restore the Carcases it has swallowed up, to the open Light, to their antient Beauty and Form.

This is indeed the obvious Idea of the Resurrection in the holy Scriptures, and most accommodated to the Vulgar, and upon them we shall fix it. There are, moreover, in the Scriptures, other occult Marks of the Body we are to have at the Resurrection; which, to those who examine more closely, point out that when we shall be *ἰσχυροί*, and fashioned according to the Glory and Light of Christ, we shall be different from our present Bodies in Matter and Form; free from the Grossness of our Structure, and the Farrago of Bowels and Humours: And therefore the secret and rational Account, is different from the vulgar One. It is very frequent in the sacred Scriptures to explain a Thing, and accommodate the Sense thereof to common Understandings; though to the more industrious Searcher of those Scriptures, the latent Truth is brought forth; *We speak Wisdom among them*



them that are perfect, says the \* Apostle: And we accommodate our selves in another manner to the Unwise. And in this the divine Wisdom shines forth, in giving Milk to Infants, and more solid Food to grown Persons. †

We have discussed the most important Points in the Doctrine of the Resurrection, and of the State of the Bodies in Heaven, in as plain and distinct a Manner as we could, in laying down both the vulgar and rational Hypothesis. It is evident to every one, the Holy Scripture, in treating upon abstruse Subjects, is apt ἀνομοιωμένη, to speak to the common Understandings of People; and in my Opinion, the Scene of general Judgement, and of the Resurrection, is represented after an humane manner, if we regard the outward and exterior Face; but if we take a more inward View, it appears in a more unaffected and simple manner; and by not distinguishing these two Hypotheses, the Antients obscured the Doctrine of the Resurrection with Unintelligibility.

It is to be observed, another Obscurity perplexes this Argument, from the same Authors not distinguishing the first and second Resurrection, as delivered by the Antients. This Distinction some of the Fathers made, and asserted we had two different Sorts of Bodies in the first and second Resurrection. In the first, the Body is to be Flesh, Bones, and Blood, though in a more perfect manner than ours are at this day, and will be like the Body of Adam in Paradise. In the second Resurrection, our spiritual celestial Body will be conform to the glorious Body of Christ, without Flesh and Blood, as it is described by || St. Paul, in his

1 Co. ii. 6. † Heb. v. 13. || St. Paul would not thank him, if alive, for laying so.



## 236 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Chapter concerning the Resurrection, to the *Corinthians*. Several of the Fathers of note, especially the Defenders of the millenary Reign of Christ, mention these different rising Bodies. By the Help of this Distinction, we can more clearly and positively resolve the Questions arising, concerning the Identity of Bodies at the Resurrection. In the first, the Body will be Flesh, but not numerically the same with the former one. In the second, it will be the numerical Body, but not terrestrial or carnal. We see, therefore, no Determination can be made, till we have stated our Question concerning the first and second Resurrection. The Marks and Characters we have before insisted upon, from the sacred Scriptures, regard the last and universal Resurrection, and the heavenly Bodies the Saints are to have. This is the celebrated Resurrection, St. Paul has made his Dissertation upon.

The Resurrection is justly stiled by *Tertullian*, *The Trust of the Christians*; which indeed is true of the two Resurrections, and he takes Notice of both. He was a Chiliaist and a Patron of that first Resurrection, in several Places; and we must interpret his Book *De Resurrectione Carnis*, (a Specimen of more Wit than Judgement) and the justest Sense we can put upon it, is, that he meant that first Resurrection, when we shall be clothed upon again with Flesh and Blood in this World. The second Resurrection is rather a Change than a Resurrection, and a Passage to an Angelick Life, or to use his own Words; \* *Demutatio in substantiam angelicam, & in caeleste regnum translatio*; A Change into an Angelical

---

\* We confess, that upon Earth we have a Kingdom promised to us, but before, and in a different Condition from that in Heaven; for after the Resurrection for a thousand Years,



*Of the STATE of the DEAD.* 237

Angelical Substance, and a Translation to the Heavenly Kingdom. With *Justin Martyr*, the first Resurrection is the Resurrection of the Flesh, in the Millennium; and *Ireneus* says, That first Resurrection shall be a carnal One. *Ireneus* l. 5. c. 33. But to return to that of *Tertullian*, *The Resurrection of the Dead is the Trust of the Christians*, i. e. Christ our Hope, who by his own Voice calls the Dead to Life, is the Head, and first Fruits of the Resurrection. That is the Day of the Lord, the Time of the Retribution of the Just, and the Restitution of all Things. The Coming of Christ, or of the Messias, was the Hope and Expectation of all the good Men: Armies of Angels celebrated his Nativity, crying out, *Glory in the Highest, Peace on Earth*. But how much greater will the Glory be in Heaven, and how much greater the Peace on Earth, at his second Coming with his Holy Angels? If at the Voice of *Mary*, saluting *Elizabeth*, *John*, scarce yet alive, leaped in his Mother's Womb: If such was the Virtue of Jesus, yet an Infant, but then conceived, and hardly formed, and latent in his Mother's Belly; that *John* did, *Perceive him coming near*, whom he could not see: How much more

in that City of Divine Building, *Jerusalem* brought from Heaven, which the Apostle calls our Mother, we say there is a Preparation for the Reception of the Saints, after the Resurrection, with a Plenty for Nourishment, with all Spiritual Goods, with a Compensation for those we have despised in this World, or lost for the Sake of God. This is the State of the Earthly Kingdom for a thousand Years; in which Time the Saints will be concluded to rise, either sooner or later, according to their Deserts. Then upon the Destruction of the World, and the Conflagration after Judgement, they shall be changed in an Instant into an Angelick Substance by that incorruptible Clothing, and be transferred to that Heavenly Kingdom.

*Tertul. Book 3. against Marcion, Chapter last.*



## 238 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

shall the Souls of the Dead, at the Coming of Christ in Triumph, perceive the God approaching, exult and lift up their Heads with Joy at their Redemption being nigh. God has concealed a great Part of the middle State from the Day of Death to the Resurrection, and the Conditions thereof from us, and presses us with all the Hardships of humane Life, that we may be more intent upon the Hope of a future Resurrection, and the second Coming of Christ, (that glorious *ἐπιφάνεια*) and expect from afar the Glory of that new erected World; and as we have this Hope, this Trust, let us persist immoveable in Virtue and Piety; *For as much as ye know that your Labour is not in vain in the Lord,* Rom. viii. 18, 19, 20, 21, 22.

### REMARKS.

I have before slightly drawn my Pen over the chief Arguments concerning the Resurrection; and as this Chapter is only a Repetition of what the Doctor has said before upon this Head: I own, to him, the Consequences of dropping a few Particles of the Body, in so complear a Dispersion as the Grave makes, are not so great, nakedly considered at the first View; yet ill Use is made of that Concession. For,

*First*, If we grant a few, they will take so many, as to destroy the Sameness of the Body, and to make way for a new One, and to contradict the plain and evident Texts of Scripture for the Resurrection of the Body.

*Secondly*, They contrast the Power and Omniscience of God, by supposing any one Particle of Matter can be out of the Sphere of his Knowledge, or resist his Call.

I shall therefore just take a transitory View of his Arguments, as I care not how small a Picture is, provided it be set in a true Light, and the Colour and Shades are justly and aptly disposed.

He grants, Christ will rise with the same Body he had upon Earth; but in contradiction, he has given him a Body far different from ours: And then as his Body did not putrify in the Grave, the Doctor is at no loss about the Particles; for surely no Man of his Profession before ever so boldly viewed the Almighty Being, as he has done in this Chapter.

St.



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 232

St. Paul in the 15th Chapter of the First to the *Corinthians*, makes an exact Parallel of Christ's Body with ours. He says down, *First*, That he died for our Sins. *Secondly*, That he was buried. *Thirdly*, That he rose the third Day. *Fourthly*, That he was afterwards seen with Corporeal and Organical Eyes. And concludes from hence, *v. 12*. *How say some among you, That there is no Resurrection of the Dead? For if there is no Resurrection of the Dead, then is Christ not risen, v. 13*. From hence he draws a perfect Analogy of Christ's Resurrection and ours, as to all the Circumstances thereof, and we shall see one another in the like manner he was seen, after his Resurrection; and that he was of the Seed of *Abraham*, I have before proved; and therefore he rose with a carnal and organical Body: What then are become of the Doctor's late Objections against the Organism of our Bodies? For by Parity of Argument, he must cut off the Legs, Arms, and Thighs of Christ, and put out his Eyes, as he has already extinguished the Light of God's Word, revealed in the Scriptures.

He proceeds to state the Question, *Whether our Bodies after Putrefaction, and being dispersed into a thousand Places, shall be recollected into little Heaps, and those be afterwards formed into the Lineaments and Figure of a perfect Body?*

He has taken a great deal of Liberty in stating the Manner of God's Operation. But this is only to make the Matter appear so formidable, as to be beyond the Power of God to perform.

He proceeds to grant the Texts of Scripture are very plain, for an Identical Resurrection, as literally plain as Words can make them, and this literal Plainness carried that Construction with the whole Church afterwards.

A Latitude of this kind allowed, renders the Scripture useless, if not pernicious; to furnish only the Materials of Dispute and Debate, and to leave every Man his Allegorical and his Literal Religion, as he pleases. He falls very heavy upon *Job*. He was an Arabian, a Foreigner before Moses and the Law, and how should he know more of the Resurrection than the Hebrews and the Prophets? I never expected the Antiquity of *Job* was an Argument against his Sense and Authority; for if Revelation was so strong as it seems to be in that Book, and the Book it self was accepted by the *Jews* as Canonical, and consequently inspired; why should we fall so foul thereon? That the *Jews* had no Notion of the Resurrection, is more taken for granted than proved; but this is a Matter of too laborious Enquiry for this Place. *Job* is quoted as Canonical by St. Paul, *1 Cor. iii. 19*. For as it is written, *he taketh the Wise in their own Craftiness*; see *Job v. 13*. And this was the constant Method of quoting

Books



## 240 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Books of Scripture by the Sacred Authors themselves, and appropriated only to them; whereas *Epimædas* and *Mæander*, are not introduced in that manner by St. Paul. Thus, in the New Testament, *Deut. v. 3.* is quoted, *Matt. iv. 4. Psal. xci. 11.* in *Matt. iv. 6. Deut. vi. 16.* in *Matt. iv. 7. Deut. x. 20.* in *Matt. iv. 10. 2. Zach. vi. 13.* by *Matt. xxvi. 31. Exod. xxiii. 28.* by *Acts xxiii. 5. Deut. xxii. 35.* by *Rom. xii. 19.* and in many other Places. I lay it down therefore for granted, the Book of *Job* was taken by St. Paul as Canonical Scripture.

We may be very much in the dark, in what Language it was first written; and whether the *Jews*, or others, translated it from the Original, is a Question; and this may account for the Variety of *Syriack* and *Arabick* Words, because the Original Book may be entirely lost: But this is certain, the Sublimity of the Thoughts shines through all Languages it was ever turned into.

In the 15th Chapter, *Elphaz* describes the Journey of the *Israelites* into *Canaan*, and quotes a Passage from some Writings of theirs he had in his Possession; His Words are, *That which I have seen I will declare, which wise Men have told from their Fathers, and have not hid it, unto whom alone the Earth was given, and no Stranger passed among them.* The succeeding Verse seems to be the Quotation, and how many more, I cannot tell. The Words are, *The wicked Man travelleth in Pain all his Days, and the Number of Years is hidden so the Oppressor.* The Words are not found in any Scripture we have at present; but it certainly was a Saying, delivered down as a proverbial Observation. It is plain from hence, the Author was more conversant with the Writings of the *Jews*, than personally acquainted with the Nation; and it is likewise probable, he lived long after *Moses*; and I cannot help thinking, he was even after *Solomon*, as he quotes, not only *Deus*, but also *Psal. cxi. 10.* or *Prov. ix. 10.* See *Job xxviii. 28. The Fear of the Lord is the Beginning of Wisdom.* He is concluded by some more ancient than *Moses*, because his Writings are independant of the *Jewish* Establishment; though from the before-mentioned Texts, it is to me very evident he was not unacquainted with that People.

Our next Business is to explain the Country he belonged to, and I can by no means come into the commonly received Notion, that he was an *Arabian*; and I believe the Scripture will give us better, and more probable Lights into this Affair.

*Uz* is mentioned, *Gen. x. 22.* as the Grandson of *Shem*; of him, as we have no further Light, we need say no more; nor is it to greater Purpose to find out *Uz* the *Horite*, *Gen. xxxvi.* nor *Jobab*, for the same Reasons. But *Gen. xxii.* tells us, That *Nabor*, *Abraham's* Brother, who dwelt in *Mesopotamia*, had eight Sons,



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 241

Sons, and the three first were *Uz*, *Buz*, and *Kemuel*, the Father of *Aram*. *Job* was of the Land of *Uz*, and *Elihu*, who I am apt to believe (as *Pool* has observed in his Synopsiſ) was the Author of the Book of *Job*, is ſaid, *Job* xxxii. 2. to be the Son of *Barachiel* the *Buzite*, of the Kindred of *Ram*. It is no difficult Matter to find the Poſterity of *Nabor* in theſe Names; for *Ram* and *Aram* are the ſame. It is therefore very probable, they lived in *Job*'s Time, not far from each other; that they kept the true Religion, and were a diſtinct Nation and People; and that *Elihu* was allied both to the *Buzites* and the *Aramites*.

Why therefore ſhould we fix *Job*, rather in *Arabia Petraea*, than in *Mefopotamia*; for if the Brothers had travelled, they would in all Probability have been diſperſed.

And as we find them together, we may, without Abſurdity, fix them in *Mefopotamia*, their firſt Native Country, near *Charan*, and that is more properly the *East* than *Arabia*. How to underſtand the *East* in the Book of *Job*, is very difficult, unleſs it was the grand Appellation of the Countries near the River *Euphrates*, that made up the Empires of the *Medes*, *Persians*, and *Babylonians*, and were the Poſterity of *Sem*; as we may find, *Gen.* x. 30. *And their Dwelling was from Meſha, as thou goeſt unto Sephar, a Mount in the Eaſt.* And this very Country, *Mefopotamia*, where *Nabor* dwelt, is *Gen.* xxix. 1. called the Country of the *Eaſt*. *Jacob went on his Journey, and came into the Land of the People of the Eaſt.* It is evident, *Mefopotamia* could not be called ſo in reſpect to its Situation towards *Canaan*, becauſe it lies from that Country very much North, and only inclining towards the *Eaſt*. *Balaam* was ſent for from the *Eaſt*, as we find, *Numbers* xxiii. 7. *Balac the King of Moab, hath brought me from Aram out of the Mountains of the Eaſt.* We have no Reaſon to doubt, but this Country was peopled by the Poſterity of *Aram*, the Grandſon of *Nabor*, of whole Kindred *Elihu* was; and this accounts for *Balaam*'s uſing the Appellations of the Omnipotent Deity, in the ſame manner with the *Iſraelites*, becauſe the *Aramites* had not univerſally deviated to Idolatry: For *Elihu*, as well as *Job*, had preſerved the Tradition of the only one God long after. Whether *Balaam* was a Heathen, or in ſome meaſure corrupted, is a Queſtion to this Day; for it is evident from *Job*, that God revealed himſelf to the People even in his Time, who had preſerved the true Religion, and it was for that Reaſon *Balaam* was ſent for as the moſt proper Perſon to curſe the *Iſraelites*: But of what Nature his Enchantments were, I cannot preſume to determine. The *Iſraelites* might call all the Workings of the Prophets, diſjoined from their Sect, Enchantments. In *Deut.* xxiii. 4. It is ſaid,

*Balaam*



## 242 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

Balaam was fetched from Pethor in Mesopotamia, and this was Aram. Balaam is indeed severely lashed by Peter and Jude, for taking the Wages of Unrighteousness. And Rev. ii. 12. is more close; But I have a few Things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the Doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a Stumbling-block before the Children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto Idols. Yet it does not from hence follow, he was really from the Beginning an Idolater. And his Conduct made him so odious, that in all probability he never returned to the Children of Ram in Mesopotamia, and to his own Country, for he was slain in Canaan. See Josh. xiii. 32.

Any one who reads the Prophecy of Balaam, will find it very near resembling the Book of Job; from whence I conclude, they both had the Mesopotamian Sublimity, and there is even Affinity of both Thought and Expression, with Numb. xxiii. ver. 9. and Job xv. 19. Numb. 10. the People shall dwell alone, and not be reckoned among the Nations. Job. Unto whom alone the Earth was given, and no stranger passed among them.

I am sure I have come as near Probability as the Nature of the Thing will bear; that Aram continued in Mesopotamia, I have made highly probable from Scripture, because Pethor was in Aram in Mesopotamia, in the Mountains of the East: And why shall we then scruple to fix the other two Brethren there, when we find Job was an Uzite, and Elibu of the Family of both Buz and Aram?

I shall only add one Observation more, and leave this Controversy to learned Men. Job mentions the Constellations of Arcturus, Orion, and Pleiades, and the Chambers of the South, e. ix. 9. *Petræalis Austri*, as they are called, as Commentators interpret it, the Constellations in the other Hemisphere, not seen by Job. Now Job, in order begins with Arcturus, whose Situation is most Northern; he proceeds to Orion, placed in the very midst, just upon the Equinoctial, and from thence he goes on to Pleiades, and the Chambers of the South. If we place Job in Mesopotamia in the Latitude of 37, that Situation very well accounts for this Verse. Pleiades is in another Hemisphere to Job's, if we place him there; but in the Latitude of 30, it is elevated above the Horizon. If we look upon the terrestrial Globe for the Longitude 81, and the Latitude 24, we shall find the Place of Pleiades correspond to the Desert of Barcha, and elevated, as above-said: From hence I conclude, Job was not so far South as Arabia Petraea; and this renders it still more probable, Mesopotamia was his Dwelling-place, being considered with other Circumstances joined thereto.

Perhaps some will say, of what Consequence is it to fix his Dwelling-place so exactly? I answer, it is a noble Testimony,

that  
Stock  
of th  
ed an  
were  
their  
Root  
cont  
Gene  
time  
canon  
Le  
Chas  
in all  
turn  
may  
If  
cann  
very  
surpr  
one  
Know  
Heath  
the G  
I  
Shad  
ther  
time  
for w  
wood  
Bu  
it ma  
of Pu  
the S  
Pain  
Wall  
sure  
ting  
Medi  
Pleas  
capab  
tation  
of He  
ed; a  
ven,



## Of the STATE of the DEAD. 243

that God had a People to whom he revealed himself besides the Stock of *Abraham*, who retained Sacrifices, and were Witnesses of the Power and Unity of the Godhead, even amongst a wicked and impious Generation. It is plain also the Writings of each were communicated, and the Revelations acknowledged, after their so long Dispersion, and branching out from the one common Root of *Irab*. All these Circumstances are accidental ones, not contrived to support a Lye, but corroborating the Truth of the Genealogies of *Genesis*, and of the Existence of *Jeh* at the same time; for it is certain the Book is independent of all the other canonical Scripture.

Let me add; the Astronomy in *Jeh*, much more suits the *Chaldean* Learning than the *Arabian*; which *Arabians*, at that Time, in all probability, knew nothing of the Stars of *Mazzaroth*, *Asturnus*, *Pleiades*, and *Orion*; whereas from the two Texts of *Jeh*, we may gather his profound knowledge in the Astronomy of that Age.

If any profound Deist will pluck these Objections to pieces, I cannot say he will do much Service to Religion, though it will very much help his own Scheme. For my part, I am agreeably surprized at the Satisfaction I have received in two Difficulties at one and the same time; *Balaam's* prophesying with such a perfect Knowledge of God, who was no *Israelite*, and sent for by a Heathen People; and the Book of *Jeh* defending the Unity of the Godhead, independantly likewise of the *Jewish* System.

I shall return now to our Doctor, who fights with his own Shadow, in raising Arguments for the Resurrection we will neither thank him for, nor use; and pulling them down at the same time. As for rewarding and punishing the Body in another World, for what it has done in this, it would be indeed like whipping a wooden Horse, and he may keep the Reason to himself.

But the Body, though it has no Sense of Pleasure, or of Pain, it may give to the Soul Pleasure or Pain; and the Adequateness of Punishments and Rewards, may require a Communication to the Soul through that Medium. The Walls of a Prison feel no Pain, yet they may give Pain to a Person confined; and the Walls of a Palace adorned with the finest Pictures, feel no Pleasure, yet they may communicate Pleasure to the Soul contemplating upon them. And if God is pleased we shall have the same Medium after the Resurrection we had before, to measure out our Pleasure and our Pain, who shall speak against it. The Soul is capable of different States and Conditions, according to its Habitation. Has not a melancholy Man, in this Life, all the Pains of Hell sometimes by the Medium of his Body being ill-affected; and may not the Punishments of Hell, or the Joys of Heaven, be communicated by a different Temperature of our Mediums?



## 244 Of the STATE of the DEAD.

diums? And I believe, indeed, that will be the Case of both the Good and Bad. Give a Man in this World a heavy Heart, and the Soul shall not be very light; and, on the other Side, give him a light Heart, and his Soul shall partake of that Alacrity.

This shakes off all his farther impertinent Reasoning with what Body we shall arise; and his pretty Objection, how Infants and Children can be in Heaven, is like charging Grenadiers for that Place; too low for Answer.

He proceeds farther even into Impiety: He says, the Ashes are dispersed over Seas, and over the Land, and into a thousand distant Regions of the Air. They are inserted into the Bodies of Animals, and into Trees, and Fossils; *Unde facile eximi & extricari nequeunt, from whence it is very difficult to extricate them.* To whom is this difficult? To God, who made every Particle from nothing? Can any Particle fly from his Presence, or escape his Knowledge? How mean a Notion is this of the infinite Power of God!

When he comes to the Labour of this Resurrection, you would think he was speaking of *Hercules* cleansing the *Augæan* Stable, rather than of the great God of Heaven. His *Miraculum Operosissimum*, is an Expression well enough for *Ovid*; but intolerable for a divine. It is very troublesome, he says, to gather all these Particles together, and then to separate them into little Parcels, and then to form these Parcels into a humane Shape. Surely the Doctor has forgot what an Operose Miracle it was to make the World; and surely that Being can make and unmake it at his Pleasure. I cannot bear to dwell upon such intolerable Stuff.

As to his Supposition, of Alienation of Parts, by devouring humane Bodies, and by absorbing the Particles in Vegetables, this is much of a piece with the former. Surely God's Power can provide against Contradictions, and no Particle can take such a Slip independantly of God's Power: This is making God an imperfect Being, and modelled according to our weak Apprehensions.

I shall only conclude, that we must insist upon the identical Resurrection, or forego the Scriptures, Antiquity, and the clearest Lights of the Christian Religion: But if the Doctor will have his *Millennium*, or first Resurrection, though it has a weak Foundation, I should not be sorry to find it true. I will neither oppose the Title of my Saviour, nor be a Malecontent under his Government. And I conclude, in whatever manner thou pleasest, O JESU come quickly!

The END of the FIRST Volume.





Divinity-Books printed for E. CURLI, over-against  
Catherine-Street in the Strand.

I. **T**HE Learned Bishop BULL's Vindication of the Church of England, from the Errours and Corruptions of the Church of Rome. Wherein, as is largely proved, the *Ru's of Faith*, and all the Fundamental Articles of the *Christian Religion*, are received, taught, professed, and acknowledged. Written at the Request of the Countess of Newburgh, in Answer to a celebrated Roman Catholick Treatise, intituled, *The Catholick Scripturist*. Now first published, from his Lordship's Original Manuscript, by his Son ROBERT BULL, Rector of Tortworth and Prebendary of Gloucester. ["As to this Work, I shall forbear giving any Character of it, my near Relation to the Author unqualifying me for such an Undertaking: The Reader himself must judge of That, who (I question not) upon a full Perusal of it, will esteem it a Performance worthy the Author whose Name it bears. *Roberts Bull.*"] Price 4s. the Small, 8s. the Large Paper.

II. A Treatise upon the PASSIONS: Or, A Discourse of the several Dignities and Corruptions of Man's Nature since the Fall. Written by the Ever-memorable Mr. JOHN HALE of Esop. Now first published, from his Original Manuscript, by a near Relation. Revised by Bishop Smairidge, and an Index added by Laurence Howel, A. M. Price 3s.

III. The Pretended REFORMERS: Or, A true History of the German Reformation; founded upon the Heresy of *John Wickliffe*, *John Hus*, and *Jerome of Prague*: And an Impartial Account of the Bohemian Wars which ensued thereupon. Made English from the French Original. With an Introductory Preface, addressed to the Patrons of the (pretended) Episcopal Reformed Churches. By *Matthias Earbery*, Presbyter of the Church of England. ["The Reader in this Book will find, perhaps, a Scene opened to his View, entirely new: The Bigotted Papist on one Hand, and the Latitudinarian Protestant on the other, appear in their proper Colours: The one by malicious Prejudice, and the other by an over-fond Partiality, had cast such a Cloud over the Affairs of this Age, that no Man of ordinary Judgement could perceive on which Side the Fault was to be imputed: But I will venture to say, this Author has made no small Progress in such a despicable Work, and with more Candour than those can justly boast, who fondly count themselves impartial Historians. *M. Earbery.*"] Price 4s.

IV. Private



## Divinity-Books printed for E. CURLE

IV. *Private Thoughts upon Religion*, in several Letters written to his Royal Highness the Duke Regent of France. By the Archbishop of Cambray. Upon the following Subjects; 1. Of the Being of a GOD; 2. Of the Worship worthy of Him; and of the True Church. 3. Of the Worship of God; the Immortality of the Soul; and the Free-Will of Man. 4. Concerning God and Religion; of the Jewish Religion; and the Messiah; and of the Christian Religion. 5. The Idea of an Infinite Being; and of the Liberty God was at; of Creating or not Creating the World. 6. Of the Truth of the Christian Religion; and its Practices. 7. Remarks upon the Whole. Made English from the Paris Edition of the French Original. With a Letter from the Abbot De Feaulon, Nephew to the Archbishop, to the Translator, concerning this Work. Price 2s. 6d.

V. *The Devout Communicant's Companion*. In two Parts. First, Being an Help and Exhortation to worthy Communicating; describing the Meaning, worthy Reception, Duty, and Benefit of the Holy Sacrament: And answering the Doubts of Conscience, and other Reasons which most generally detain Men from it. Second, Consisting of a regular Set of Devotions, Meditations and Prayers, to be used Before, At, and After Receiving the Holy Sacrament. Collected from the Works of Archbishop Tillotson, Bishop Taylor, Bishop Patrick, Dr. Horneck, Dr. Storr, Dr. Stanhope, Mr. Kettlewell, Mr. Nelson, &c. Price 2s.

VI. *The Christian Pilgrimage*. Or, A Companion for Lent. Being Meditations upon the Passion, Death, Resurrection, and Ascension of our Blessed Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ; divided into Eighteen Stations, with Prayers suited to each. Written originally in French, and recommended to the Use of all true Lovers of Devotion, by the Archbishop of Cambray. Made English by Mrs. Jane Barker, of Wilthorpe, near Stamford in Lincolnshire. Dedicated to the Right Honourable the Countess of Nottingham. Price 2s.

VII. *An Enquiry into the Nature and Original of the 33th Canon*, by Evidence historical and rational, with Variety of incidental Matters relating to its History: Including also the History of *Masses*, *Latin Service*, and *Indulgences*; their various Forms and Use; with Reasons for the Canon's being a *Bidding of Prayer*. By Conyers Place, M. A. of Dorchester. Pt. 1. 8d.

VIII. *The Notions of the Heathen World concerning the State of the Dead*. Made English, from the French Original of Monsieur SIMON, by Mr. Morgan. Price 1s.

IX. *Dr. Moss's Divine Poems on the Divinity of Christ*, in Defense of the Trinity, and against Transubstantiation. Pt. 1. 1s.



